

793  
TEACHING IN INDIA SERIES

A  
History of Education  
in  
India and Pakistan

---

FOURTH EDITION

F. E. KEAY  
*with an additional chapter by*  
D. D. Karve

793  
3867

793

726



CX

*Teaching in India Series XXVI*

*A HISTORY OF EDUCATION  
IN INDIA AND PAKISTAN*

# A History of Education in India and Pakistan

F. E. KEAY, M.A., D.LIT.

*With an additional chapter by*

D. D. KARVE

*FOURTH EDITION*



OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS  
1964

Oxford University Press, Amen House, London E.C.4

GLASGOW NEW YORK TORONTO MELBOURNE WELLINGTON  
BOMBAY CALCUTTA MADRAS KARACHI LAHORE DACCA  
CAPE TOWN SALISBURY NAIROBI IBADAN ACCRA  
KUALA LUMPUR HONGKONG

16.4.07  
12444

First edition 'Ancient Indian Education' 1918  
Second edition 'Indian Education in Ancient and Later  
Times' 1938 (Four times reprinted)  
Third edition 'A History of Education in India and Pakistan' 1959

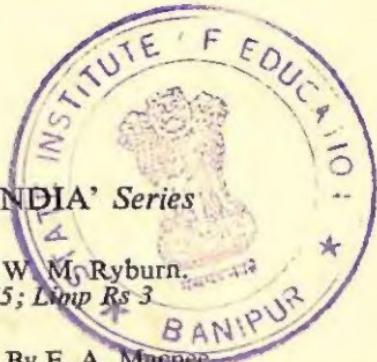
Fourth edition 1964

FRANK ERNEST KEAY 1879  
DINAKAR DHONDO KARVE 1899

Chapters X and XII-XIII © Oxford University Press 1959

Chapter XIV © Oxford University Press 1964

Printed in India by S. C. Ghose at the Calcutta Press Private Limited,  
1 Wellington Square, Calcutta 13 and published by John Brown,  
Oxford University Press, Mercantile Buildings, Calcutta 1



The 'TEACHING IN INDIA' Series

- II THE TEACHING OF ENGLISH. By W. M. Ryburn.  
*Eighth edition. Boards Rs 3.75; Limp Rs 3*
- III THE TEACHING OF GEOGRAPHY. By E. A. Macnee.  
Revised and enlarged  
*Fifth edition. Boards Rs 4; Limp Rs 3.25*
- IV THE ORGANIZATION OF SCHOOLS. By W. M. Ryburn.  
*Fourth edition. Boards Rs 3.75; Limp Rs 3*
- V THE TEACHING OF HISTORY. By V. D. Ghate.  
*Sixth edition. Boards Rs 4; Limp Rs 3.25*
- VI THE TEACHING OF ENGLISH SPELLING. By H. R. Bhatia.  
*Third edition. Boards Rs. 2.50; Limp Rs 2*
- VII THE USE OF NEW-TYPE TESTS IN INDIA. By Emil W. Menzel.  
*Fourth edition. Boards Rs 4.75; Limp Rs 4*
- IX THE TEACHING OF THE MOTHER-TONGUE. By W. M. Ryburn.  
*Third edition. Boards Rs 3.75; Limp Rs 3*
- X THE TEACHING OF READING. By Emil W. Menzel.  
*Third edition. In preparation*
- XI THE TEACHING OF SCIENCE By L. Ghansham Dass.  
*Fifth edition. Boards Rs 4; Limp Rs 3.50*
- XIV THE ORGANIZATION OF LIBRARIES. By S. R. Ranganathan.  
*Third edition. Boards Rs 3.75; Limp Rs 3.25*
- XV THE PRINCIPLES OF TEACHING. By W. M. Ryburn.  
*Third edition. Boards Rs 3.75; Limp Rs 3*
- XVI INTRODUCTION TO EDUCATIONAL PSYCHOLOGY. By W. M. Ryburn.  
*Second edition. Boards Rs 5; Limp Rs 4.25*
- XVIII PLAY WAY SUGGESTIONS. By W. M. Ryburn.  
*Boards Rs 3.50; Limp Rs 3*

- XIX HOW TO STUDY. By Emil W. Menzel. *Boards Rs 4; Limp Rs 3.75*
- XX SOCIAL STUDIES IN THE SCHOOL. By K. Nesiah.  
*Third edition. Boards Rs 3.25*
- XXI THE VISUAL APPROACH TO TEACHING. By T. L. Green.  
*Second edition. Boards Rs 6.25; Limp 5.50*
- XXIV AIDS AND TESTS IN THE TEACHING OF ENGLISH AS A  
SECOND LANGUAGE. By W. R. P. Somaratne.  
*Boards Rs 2.75; Limp Rs 2.25*
- XXVI A HISTORY OF EDUCATION IN INDIA AND PAKISTAN.  
By F. E. Keay, with an additional chapter by D. D. Karve.  
*Fourth edition. Boards Rs 3.75; Limp Rs 3*
- XXVII BLACKBOARD WORK. By G. Ramshaw, adapted by David  
Horsburgh. *Boards Rs 3.25; Limp Rs 2.50*
- XXVIII THE TEACHER AND HIS PUPILS. By H. J. Byrne, adapted by  
N. V. Manuel. *Boards Rs 3.75; Limp Rs 3*
- XXIX THE TEACHING OF MATHEMATICS. By E. J. James, adapted by  
R. Narasimhachari. *In preparation*
- XXX MODERN INDIAN EDUCATION. By T. N. Siqueira. *Boards  
Rs 4.75; Limp Rs 4*
- XXXI EDUCATION IN CITIZENSHIP. By F. V. Nilakantam. *Boards  
Rs 3.75; Limp Rs 3*

*To my many friends in the great  
sub-continent of India and Pakistan  
amongst whom I have spent the best  
years of my life, from whom I have  
received many kindnesses, and from  
whom I have learnt many lessons.*



## PREFACE

WHEN the first edition of this book was published many years ago, under the title *Indian Education in Ancient and Later Times*, it was intended to be an inquiry into the origins and ideals of education in India and, though its scope was somewhat enlarged, this was the main purpose of the second edition.

Since that time much has taken place and especially the country has now been divided into the two independent republics of India and Pakistan. It has therefore been decided to bring the story up to date and to adopt the present title.

It must be understood that in referring to the area included in this survey the name India often includes what has now been divided into the two separate republics.

I am grateful to many persons too numerous to mention from whom I have received help or suggestions in connexion with the present volume.

It is encouraging to know that the book has been found useful by those interested in the great task of education in this subcontinent which has been my home for the greater part of my adult life and which I have come to love as my own.

F.E.K.

## CONTENTS

PAGE

I BRAHMANIC EDUCATION:	
Early Beginnings	1
II BRAHMANIC EDUCATION:	
Development	10
III BRAHMANIC EDUCATION:	
Special Features	18
IV VOCATIONAL EDUCATION	
	46
V WOMEN'S EDUCATION	
	72
VI BUDDHIST EDUCATION	
	82
VII MUSLIM EDUCATION	
	107
VIII CENTRES OF LEARNING	
	138
IX POPULAR ELEMENTARY EDUCATION	
	151
X EDUCATION IN SOUTH INDIA	
	176
XI SOME GENERAL CONCLUSIONS	
	183
XII WESTERN EDUCATION:	
Beginnings	197
XIII WESTERN EDUCATION:	
Developments	205
XIV EDUCATION SINCE 1947	
	213
BIBLIOGRAPHY	
	230
INDEX	
	234

## CHAPTER I

### BRĀHMANIC EDUCATION: EARLY BEGINNINGS

WITHIN the boundaries of India and Pakistan there dwells a population approaching five hundred and fifty millions, derived from different races and speaking many different languages. Among the races four main types have been distinguished, namely, Dravidian, Aryan, Scythian and Mongolian, and besides these, other races, in small numbers, have been introduced into India at different periods of its history, such as Parsees, Arabs, Turks, Afghans, Moguls, and at a later date, some of the European races like the Portuguese and the English. The main types have not been kept distinct, but there has been a fusion of races on a large scale. The Dravidians represent the earliest known inhabitants of India; but it is the Aryan race that has had the greatest influence in controlling its destiny.

The Aryans entered India by the defiles of the north-west at some unknown date before 1000 B.C. There were probably several waves of invasion, each pushing the one before it farther east or south. The influence of the Aryan race is not, however, to be judged by its numbers, or the extent of territory which was occupied. Not only did Aryan princes establish dynasties in many parts of India, but it was the Aryans, and especially the priestly class, the Brāhmans, who moulded the religion, philosophy, science, and art, as well as the social organization which is spread all over India. At the time when the Aryans entered the Panjab they were divided into many tribes or classes governed by chieftains. The father had great power as head of the family. There were different classes amongst the Aryans, but these had not yet hardened into castes. These classes were the nobles or chieftains and their families,

the priestly families, and the mass of the people who were chiefly employed in agriculture and cattle-rearing. The Dravidians were often their foes, but those captured in war became domestic slaves. The religion of the Aryans was a form of nature worship. The vault of heaven, the dawn, the winds, the lightning were considered the activities of personal gods to whom sacrifices and praise were offered. Worship was carried on in the open without temples or idols. Indra, Agni, and Soma were the deities to whom hymns were most often addressed.

Our knowledge of this period is derived from the *Samhitas* (collections of verses) of the *Vedas*, which form the oldest strata of Indian literature. The *Rigveda* was the earliest of these collections. It contains 1,017 hymns divided into ten different books, or *mandalas*. The composition of these hymns took place at some time previous to 1000 B.C., while the Aryan race still occupied territories on both sides of the Indus.<sup>1</sup> Of the collection of ten books it is considered by scholars that books II to VII formed the original nucleus.<sup>2</sup> Each of these six is ascribed to a different seer (*rishi*), and was probably the work of himself and his descendants. They were thus family collections handed down from generation to generation, and no doubt guarded jealously as a family inheritance. It had become the custom for chieftains or nobles to appoint *purohitas*, or domestic priests, to bring them prosperity by sacrifice, and it was probably in such priestly families of high standing that the collections of hymns were formed and preserved, and the competition among these families to possess the best hymns led to the development of a dignified and expressive literary dialect. As the influence of the priests increased, the ritual of the sacrifice became more complex. The technical lore of language and hymns was

<sup>1</sup> Macdonell, *Sans. Lit.*, p. 40. <sup>2</sup> Ibid., p. 43.

handed down from father to son, and this was no doubt the beginning of Brāhmanic education. In a hymn<sup>1</sup> belonging to one of these early books there is a reference to what was probably the earliest form of the Brāhmanic school in India. It is a poem which compares the gathering of frogs in the rainy season with the meeting together of Brāhmans:

‘Each of these twain receives the other kindly, while they are dwelling in the flow of waters.

‘When the frog moistened by the rain springs forward, and Green and Spotty both combine their voices,

‘When one of these repeats the other’s language, as he who learns the lesson of the teacher,

‘Your every limb seems to be growing larger, as ye converse with eloquence on the waters.’

Each experienced priest probably taught his sons or nephews the ritual lore and hymns which were traditional in the family, by letting them repeat them over and over again after him until all had been committed to memory, and probably each family guarded the secrecy of its own sacred tradition.

At some time and in some way unknown these family collections came to be amalgamated and taught together. This may have been due to the action of some powerful chieftain who wished to gather for his own benefit all the sacrificial literature. The first and eighth books were then added at some time as also the ninth, which consists of hymns used for the *Soma* sacrifice. The tenth book was added last of all, and although it contains some old material, some of it was written later. One hymn<sup>2</sup> in it refers to caste, and it is evident that by this time social distinctions had increased and society become more complex. In a hymn<sup>3</sup> of this last book there is reference to the learned Brāhmans meeting together for debate:

<sup>1</sup> *Rigveda*, vii, 103, Griffith’s translation. <sup>2</sup> Ibid., x. 90.

<sup>3</sup> *Rigveda*, x, 71

'All friends are joyful in the friend who cometh in triumph,  
having conquered in assembly.'

'He is their blame averter, food provider, prepared is he  
and fit for deed of vigour.'

'One plies his constant task reciting verses; one sings the  
holy psalm in Sakvari measures.'

'One more, the Brahman, tells the lore of being, and one  
lays down the rules of sacrificing.'

It is possible that the success in debate may refer to the passing of some test required before a young Brāhmaṇ was considered eligible to take part in the sacrificial ritual.<sup>1</sup>

The gathering together of all the hymns into one collection took place probably before 1000 B.C. When this was done it is likely that the schools where the priestly lore was learnt were no longer always family schools, though in many cases no doubt the boy was pupil to his own father. This indeed was often so in much later times.

The word *Veda* really means 'knowledge', from the root *vid*, 'to know', and so was used to designate the sacred lore or collection of sacred literature. The *Rigveda* means the 'Veda of Hymns', from *rich*, 'a laudatory stanza'. This collection of sacred poems was probably made not so much to preserve them as literature, but because they were needed for sacrificial use.

There were three functions which the priest might perform in the ritual, and to those who performed them different names were given. The *hotri* was the leading priest, and while the sacrifice was being made he recited poems or hymns of praise in honour of the particular god he was worshipping (Indra, Agni, etc.). Another part of the ritual was concerned with the *Soma* sacrifice. *Soma*<sup>2</sup> was really a juice pressed out from a certain plant, which on account of its exhilarating and invigorating action came to be regarded as a divine drink which bestowed everlasting

<sup>1</sup> Compare the 'Responsio' of the Middle Ages in Europe.

<sup>2</sup> Macdonell, *Sans. Lit.*, pp. 98ff.

life. It was afterwards hypostatized and regarded as a god, and a special ritual grew up, in connexion with which hymns were sung. The priest who sang these *sāmans* was called an *udgātri*. Another priest was concerned with the manual acts of sacrificing, and he was called an *ahdvaryu*. There was at first, however, no distinct order, and each priest might perform any of these functions. There was but one education for all, and each priestly student received a triple<sup>1</sup> training so that he might perform any one of these three duties. Gradually, however, the ritual of the sacrifices became elaborated, and with its growing complexity some division of priestly labour was unavoidable. No one priest could become an expert in the three branches of ritual, and specialist training became necessary. Probably at first it consisted in a priestly student first learning the ritual of all three branches and then specializing in one of them. The collection of *Soma* hymns into the ninth book of the *Rigveda* seems to show traces of this. But eventually something more than this was needed, and there came to be three orders of priests, each possessing its own particular *Veda*, and having its own training schools. This probably took place at some time between 1000 and 800 B.C.

The *udgātri* had to learn to sing all the tunes required for the *Soma* ritual, and to know which particular strophe was required for each sacrifice. All the stanzas to be chanted at the *Soma* sacrifice were gathered into a separate collection called the *Sāmaveda*. All its verses except seventy-five were taken from the *Rigveda*, and form a special musical collection, or sacrificial liturgy, for the *Soma* ritual. It consists of two parts called *ārchipkas*. The first *ārchipka* consists of stanzas, each of which was associated with a separate tune of which there were no less than 585. The second part, or *uttarārchipka*, contains the strophes which

<sup>1</sup> Macdonell, *Sans. Lit.*, pp. 171ff.

were required for use in the ritual. The complicated work of the *udgātri* priest thus led to the creation of a special school for young Brāhmans who wished to specialize in this branch of study. At a later date, when writing began to be used, tune books called *ganas* were prepared.

Although the recitation of the appropriate hymns of praise at the ordinary sacrifices was the special duty of the *hotri* priest, the *adhvaryu*, who performed the manual acts of the sacrifice, was required to utter certain ritual formulas (*yajñishi*), and at different points of the ritual had also to utter certain prayers and praises. For the training of the *adhvaryu* priests also, special schools arose, and their particular *Veda* was the *Yajurveda*.<sup>1</sup> This collection consists of prose formulas, or *mantras*, among which many verses, mostly taken from the *Rigveda*, are also interpolated. When these special schools were formed for the *udgātri* and *adhvaryu* priests, the older schools connected with the *Rigveda* came to be regarded as special schools for the *hotri* priests. Up to this time it would seem that only young Brāhmans were admitted to these schools, but there seems to have been no hard-and-fast distinction between the three orders of priests, and a priest might exercise any or all of the three functions if only he had received the necessary training. These three *Vedas* alone were originally recognized as canonical collections. But somewhat later there came to be recognized a fourth *Veda* known as the *Atharvaveda*.<sup>2</sup> It took a long time to establish its position, and even to this day in certain parts of south India it is almost unknown. It is a book of magic and sorcery and consists of spells, which were used by the incantation priests. Most of these spells are to be used against hostile agencies such as diseases, animals, demons, wizards, and foes; but some are of an auspicious nature and intended to

<sup>1</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 174ff. <sup>2</sup> Macdonell, *Sans. Lit.*, pp. 185ff.

bring prosperity and good luck. In connexion with this *Veda* another kind of specialist school arose.

By the time these various types of priestly schools had been formed the centre of the Aryan civilization had shifted eastward and lay somewhere between the Sutlej and the Jumna rivers. There came to be slight differences in the Vedic texts and each version was called a *sākhā*. Those who followed a particular *sākhā* of a *Veda* were said to form a *charana*, or school, of that *Veda*. At some time, however, precautions were taken for the preservation of the sacred text, and this led to the constitution of the *padapāṭha*<sup>1</sup> and other forms of the sacred texts.

The different kinds of priestly schools had now become well developed, and were learned associations with a growing reputation, and a priest was proud of the school in which he had received his training, and he could not perform his duties as priest without having passed through one of these schools. The first duty of the student was to learn by heart the particular *Veda* of his school. This he did by repeating it after his teacher until perfect accuracy was secured. The method was entirely oral, and it was not till much later times that writing was introduced. He would also receive a great deal of instruction regarding his duties as a priest of the particular school in which he was studying, and also explanations of the meaning of the hymns and ritual acts. The instruction was called *vidhi*, the explanation *arthavāda*. For a long time these lectures were given by the teacher as he willed in his own language, but in each school this didactic material tended to become stereotyped in the *Brāhmaṇas*.<sup>2</sup> These works are in prose, and were composed somewhere between 800 and 500 B.C. The *Brāhmaṇas* are connected with the different Vedic

<sup>1</sup> See below, pp. 39 f. and Macdonell, *Sans. Lit.*, p. 51

<sup>2</sup> Macdonell, *Sans. Lit.*, p. 202.

schools and contain such material as the students of each *Veda* required, but their general characteristics are the same. Besides the instruction and explanation relating to the sacrificial ritual they contain mythological stories and legends, speculation, and argument, and we can find in them the first beginnings of grammar, astronomy, etymology, philosophy, and law. Their intellectual activity was centred, however, on the sacrifice, and much of the matter contained in them seems meaningless and puerile to the modern mind. They exhibit an advanced sacerdotalism, but at the same time signs of considerable intellectual vigour. The language of the old hymns had now become archaic, and unintelligible to the multitude. This is referred to in the *Satapatha Brāhmaṇa*,<sup>1</sup> and was no doubt one of the reasons why the power of the priesthood increased.

The Aryans had now advanced farther into India, and it is perhaps to this period that we are to ascribe the events which form the historical basis of the two great epics, the *Mahābhārata* and the *Rāmayana*. During this period there was a growth of luxury. The power of the king became greater and he had begun to employ an army of hired soldiers. The supremacy of the priesthood became established, and the priest came to be regarded no longer as a servant or companion of the king, but as his superior. The classes hardened into caste divisions, and besides the Brāhmans (priests), Kshatriyas (nobles and warriors), and Vaiśyas (agriculturists and traders), who were of Aryan descent, though probably by this time mixed with non-Aryans, the great mass of non-Aryan peoples were classed as Sūdras. In course of time these castes became divided into many more, and every social distinction created by occupation, or race, or language

<sup>1</sup> *Satap. Br.*, iii, 2, 1-24.

tended to produce a separate caste. During this time also there was a considerable development of educational activities. This was accompanied by growing specialization in studies and the production of many textbooks.

## CHAPTER II

## BRĀHMANIC EDUCATION: DEVELOPMENT

WE have already seen how the influence of the priesthood had been growing and the ritual of the sacrifice enormously developed. But there must always have been some earnest seekers after truth who were not satisfied with sacrificial ritual. Already in some of the latest hymns of the *Rigveda* there are traces of philosophical speculation. Men were asking what the universe is and how it came into being, what the soul of man is and what law governs birth and death. These and other great questions were troubling the minds of thoughtful persons, and those who sought an answer to them often forsook home and family and worldly duties and retired to the forests, where they spent their time in asceticism and meditation. This religious ferment was contributed to not only by Brāhmans, but by many religious laymen. At the end of the *Brāhmaṇas* are certain treatises, known as *Āranyakas*,<sup>1</sup> or 'forest books'. They are allegorical expositions of the sacrificial ritual, and are considered to be the *Brāhmaṇas* of the *Vānaprasthas*, an order of forest hermits that appeared about this time, who no longer performed the actual sacrifices, but only meditated on them. Some, however, have considered them to be treatises which, on account of their mystic sanctity, were only to be communicated in the solitude of the forest. They form a transition to the *Upanishads*, which are often embedded in them. These are treatises wholly given up to philosophical speculation and represent the last stage of the *Brāhmaṇa* literature. The higher philosophical knowledge which they set forth came to be recognized as the *Vedānta* (end of the *Veda*)—the completion and crown

<sup>1</sup> Macdonell, *Sans. Lit.*, p. 204.

of Vedic learning. These treatises were composed some time between 800 and 500 B.C. The leading ideas of this philosophical speculation are that the world has been evolved from the *Ātman*, or Universal Soul, and that this is also the Self within us. The inequalities of human life are explained by the doctrines of *karma* and transmigration.

From the *Upanishads* we get many more sidelights on the ancient Brāhmanic education. The meaning of the word '*Upanishad*', has been a matter of discussion. Max Müller<sup>1</sup> says that '*Upanishad*', besides being the recognized title of certain philosophical treatises, occurs also in the sense of doctrine and of secret doctrine, and that it seems to have assumed this meaning from having been used originally in the sense of session or assembly, in which one or more pupils receive instruction from a teacher. These treatises profess to give a kind of esoteric doctrine, or higher enlightenment, and refer to pupils as having studied all the *Vedas* and sacrificial ritual, and yet without the knowledge of the answers to the deeper philosophical speculations which troubled earnest seekers after truth. Śvetaketu Aruṇeya was a Brāhmaṇ youth who was sent to school by his father. 'Having<sup>2</sup> begun his apprenticeship (with a teacher) when he was twelve years of age, Śvetaketu returned to his father when he was twenty-four, having then studied all the *Vedas*—conceited, considering himself well-read, and stern.'

'His father said to him: "Śvetaketu, as you are so conceited, considering yourself well-read, and so stern, my dear, have you ever asked for the instruction by which we hear what cannot be perceived, by which we know what cannot be known ?"'

<sup>1</sup> S.B.F., vol. 1, p. lxxx. <sup>2</sup> Chhānd. Up., vi. 1, 2, 3.

Śvetaketu having expressed his ignorance of this deep teaching, his father proceeded to instruct him.

In the early Vedic schools it seems that instruction was confined to young Brāhmans, and was regarded mainly as a preparation for their future vocation as priests, but at some time before 500 B.C. the education of young Kshatriyas and Vaiśyas had also come under Brāhmaṇ control, and in their case was an opportunity of inculcating in their minds the necessary directions for all their future life. It became also the exclusive privilege of the Brāhmans to give this instruction, and this marks the growing influence of the priesthood. The ceremony of initiation and investiture with the sacred thread came to be regarded for all the Aryan youth as the preliminary to school life. The three castes which had this privilege, namely, the Brāhmans, Kshatriyas, and Vaiśyas, were called *dvija*, or 'twice-born', because the ceremony of initiation was looked upon as a second birth.

By the time, then, that the various portions of the *Veda* had been completed, Brāhmaṇic education was not only of long standing, but was highly organized, and the literature of the next period shows elaborate rules formed for its regulation. This literature is known as the *Sūtras*, and came into being from about 600 to 200 B.C. The sacred books which had to be mastered by the student had increased to a huge bulk, and it was necessary to condense their teaching into some convenient form. *Sūtras*, or 'threads', consist of aphorisms, or pithy phrases, in which condensation and brevity have been carried out to such an extent that the result is often an obscurity which can only be explained by a commentary. There was a saying that the saving of one syllable in a *Sūtra* gave more pleasure than the birth of a son, the force of which can only be understood when we remember how important

it was considered that every Hindu should have a son to succeed him and perform the sacrificial rites after his death. The rules which applied to education are contained in the *Dharma<sup>1</sup> Sūtras*. *Dharma* is 'one<sup>2</sup> of the most comprehensive and important terms in the whole of Sanskrit literature'. It includes the ideas of sacred law and duty, justice, religious merit, religion and morality. It is applied to the established practice or custom of any caste or community. That which a man is expected to do because of his position in life or his caste is his *dharma*. During the early centuries of Brāhmanic education the *dharma* relating to education as well as to other matters had been gradually formed, and we have already seen something of this process going on. The composition of the *Sūtras* helped to fix the *dharma* and so to stereotype a great deal of the social system, including the educational theory and practice of the schools. The oldest existing *Dharma Sūtras* are considered by scholars to be those of Gautama, and their date is supposed to be about 500 B.C.<sup>3</sup> The *Dharma Sūtras* contain regulations relating to social life, and amongst other things have many rules dealing with the duties of teachers and students. It must be remembered, of course, that the rules, though composed about 500 B.C., give an account of practice which must have been still more ancient. There are other extant *Dharma Sūtras*, besides those of Gautama, namely, those of Āpastamba, Vasistha and Baudhāyana, which probably came a little later, and the great Law Book of India, the Code of Manu, is a metrical work supposed by scholars to date from about A.D. 200, but to be based upon a much older *Mānavā Dharma Sūtra*,<sup>4</sup> which is no longer extant.

<sup>1</sup>Also in the *Grīhya Sūtras*. <sup>2</sup>See E.R.E., Vol. iv., p. 702, article on *Dharma*, by J. Jolly. <sup>3</sup> Macdonell, *Sans. Lit.*, p. 260.

<sup>4</sup> Macdonell, *Sans. Lit.*, p. 428.

Brāhmanic education has continued from very early times right down to the present day, and throughout that long period, though there was some development and change, its salient features have remained the same. The long struggle with Buddhism ended in a triumph for the Brāhmans though not without their own system becoming modified, but it had little influence in changing the educational system. The rule of the Muslims was, on the whole, unfavourable towards Brāhman learning, although it was patronized by Akbar and others. Some of the more ruthless, or more orthodox, of Muslim sovereigns destroyed Brāhman places of learning, and scattered their students, but in spite of this interruption Brāhman learning continued.

Throughout the centuries since the *Sūtras* were written the history of Brāhmanic education is difficult to trace. There was probably very little development with regard to either theory or practice, and the subjects of the curriculum remained very much the same. The development of monastic institutions, and of *guru* worship is referred to elsewhere.<sup>1</sup> In the Buddhist period the Brāhmanic learning continued side by side with the Buddhist. The latter was indeed largely influenced both in its ideals and practice by the Brāhmanic education, and borrowed many of its textbooks from the Bārhmans, especially when Buddhists adopted Sanskrit as a medium of instruction. The educational institutions of the Buddhists, like Nālanda, were at one period probably more influential and popular than those of the Brāhmans. When the Muslim invasions burst upon India both Brāhman and Buddhist educational institutions suffered severely and those of the Buddhists afterward decayed and disappeared, a process which was helped by the assimilation of Buddhism in India with

<sup>1</sup> See pages 22-3 and 42f.

Hinduism. But Brāhmaṇ education continued in spite of the difficulties, and as the Buddhist centres of learning decayed those of the Brāhmaṇs became more prominent.

Brāhmaṇ schools of Sanskrit learning were indeed scattered all over the land in numerous towns and villages. These institutions were known as *tols*. Sometimes in a town of special sanctity, or even of political importance, numbers of these *tols* were established side by side and constituted a kind of university. Examples of these are Benares and Nadiā.

William Ward gives us<sup>1</sup> some interesting sidelights on Brāhmaṇic education as he found it, especially in Bengal, at the beginning of the nineteenth century. He says that Hindu college or schools were called ‘*Chutooshpathee*’, that is the place where four *Śāstras* were studied. These four were grammar, law, the *purāṇas*, and the *darśanas* (or philosophy). This word was corrupted to ‘*Chouparee*’. The places of learning were usually built of clay, and consisted sometimes of three rooms and sometimes of eight or ten, in two rows, with a reading-room open on all sides at the farther end. These huts were frequently erected at the expense of the teacher, who not only solicited alms to raise the building, but also to feed his pupils. Ward says that three kinds of Brāhmaṇic schools existed in Bengal. In the first, grammar and poetry as well as the *purāṇas* and *smṛitis* were studied, in the second kind the law works and the *purāṇas*; and in the third the *Nyāya Darśana*, or logic. Select works were read and explained, but there was no instruction by lectures. The lessons were committed to memory and then explained by the teacher. In other parts of India, he says, colleges were not common, but individuals at their houses taught grammar, and mendicant Brāhmaṇs taught the *Vedas* and other *Śāstras* at the

<sup>1</sup> Ward, ii, pp. 483ff.

*mathas*, or monastic institutions, where they rested. No fees were received from the pupils, but the teachers received presents from them. Unless patronized by a rich man the subsistence of the teacher was in most cases a scanty one. Pupils were generally over twelve years of age, and were most often maintained by their parents, and resided either at the college or at the house of some neighbour. In Benares, Ward found eighty-three *mathas* and 1,371 pupils. The average number of pupils to each teacher was sixteen or seventeen. Some of these schools studied the *Veda*, some only grammar, some studied poetry, some the *Vedānta*, some logic and law, and some astronomy. Ward also gives lists of schools at Nadiā and Calcutta, and mentions many other places where Sanskrit schools existed. With regard to libraries, he says that some colleges contained as many as ten, and others as many as forty or fifty volumes. Like students in other parts of the world these Brāhmanic pupils were not always ideal in their behaviour, and Ward mentions their extravagance, night frolics, robbing of orchards, and other misdemeanours. With regard to motives which led to pupils undergoing this form of education, he says that learned Brāhmans were more esteemed by the Hindus than ignorant ones, and received more costly presents. Offices under government also were open to those Brāhmans who had a knowledge of the ancient law. Moreover, those who were going to perform the priestly rites for Hindu families needed at least some knowledge of the Hindu learning.

In ancient times probably most Brāhmans passed through the period of studentship, but they did not necessarily all become teachers, and in Manu certain other occupations are admitted as allowable for a Brāhman. With regard to Kshatriyas and Vaiśyas, who were also eligible for studentship, it is impossible to say how many

of them really undertook the responsibilities of this position. As shown elsewhere, it is probable that for them the study of the *Veda* was something far less serious than for young Brāhmans, and the duties which they had to perform in life must have necessitated their receiving the education suitable for their special callings before they became adults. Probably they tended less and less to attend the Brāhmanic schools, and vocational schools were developed, or at least domestic training for their future duties in life. The Śūdras were always shut out from Brāhmanic education, and they also developed their own system of training for the young craftsman. The popular system of education, which will be noticed in a later chapter, also grew up to meet a need for which the Brāhmanic schools made no provision.

Some of the ideals of the ancient Brāhmanic education will be discussed further in a separate chapter, as well as the causes of its decline, but reviewing it briefly as a whole, one may say that, like the Muslim education with which it has many points of similarity, it was at least not inferior to the education of Europe before the Revival of Learning. Not only did the Brāhman educators develop a system of education which survived the crumbling of empires and the changes of society, but they also, through all these thousands of years, kept aglow the torch of higher learning, and numbered amongst them many great thinkers who have left their mark not only on the learning of India, but upon the intellectual life of the world.

### CHAPTER III

## BRĀHMANIC EDUCATION: SPECIAL FEATURES

*Teacher and Pupil.*—In the *Atharvaveda*<sup>1</sup> there is a mystic hymn which describes the sun, or the primeval principle, under the figure of a Brāhman student (*brahmachārī*), who brings firewood and alms for his teacher. This offering of firewood to a teacher became the regular way by which a youth sought to be recognized as a pupil, and implied a desire to partake in his domestic sacrifice and to accept the duty of helping to maintain it. It also came to be a duty for students to collect alms for their own support and that of their teacher.<sup>2</sup>

In the *Satapatha Brāhmaṇa* there is given a line of succession of teachers who have transmitted the sacrificial science.<sup>3</sup> This line is traced back to Prajāpati, and Brāhman students are spoken of as guarding their teacher, his house and cattle, lest he should be taken from them.<sup>4</sup> There are references also to a lad going to a teacher with firewood in his hand and asking to become his pupil,<sup>4</sup> and to students collecting alms and fuel for their teacher.<sup>5</sup>

In the early days it was not, it seems, the universal custom for a Brāhman youth to enter upon a life of studentship. Thus in the *Chhāndogya Upanishad* we read<sup>6</sup> that Śvetaketu's father said to him, 'Śvetaketu, go to school, for there is none belonging to our race, darling, who not having studied (the *Veda*), is, as it were, a Brāhman by birth only'. So also the entrance<sup>7</sup> of Satyakāma, son of Jabālā, upon the period of studentship seems to be his own voluntary choice. It was still often the custom for a

<sup>1</sup> *Atharvaveda*, xi, 5. <sup>2</sup> *Satap. Br.* x, 6, 5, 9. <sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, xi, 4, 91, 9.  
<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, xi, 5, 4. <sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, iii, 2, 6, 15. <sup>6</sup> *Chhānd. Up.*, vi, 1, 1.  
<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, iv, 4, 1

son to receive instruction at the hands of his father, as in the case of Śvetaketu,<sup>1</sup> but he often went to other teachers.<sup>2</sup> When a student wished to become a pupil of any teacher, the recognized way of making application to him was to approach him with fuel in the hands as a sign that the pupil wished to serve him and help to maintain his sacred fire. 'Let<sup>3</sup> him, in order to understand this, take fuel in his hand and approach a *guru* who is learned and dwells entirely in *Brāhma*.' It seems to have been usual for the teacher to make an inquiry into the birth and family of the applicant before receiving him as a pupil, as in the case of Satyakāma.<sup>4</sup> In this case the inquiry was made in a very indulgent manner, but it seems to show that it was still the rule only for Brāhmans to be received as students. One instance is given where instruction was granted without<sup>5</sup> any formal reception.<sup>6</sup>

The period of studentship was, however, looked upon not only as a time of learning, but as a time of rigorous discipline. There are some instances in the *Upanishad*, where no teaching was given for several years after studentship had begun,<sup>7</sup> but these seem to be exceptional cases. Pupils had to work for their teacher in house and field attending to his sacred fires,<sup>8</sup> looking after his cattle,<sup>9</sup> and collecting alms for him.<sup>10</sup> The pupil also accompanied his teacher and awaited his commands.<sup>11</sup> 'In the leisure time left from the duties to be performed for the *guru*'<sup>12</sup> the *Veda* was studied.

It seems to have been the custom sometimes for students to travel far and wide<sup>13</sup> in order to attach themselves to

<sup>1</sup> *Chhānd. Up.*, v, 3, 1; *Bṛih. Ār. Up.*, vi, 2, 1; *Kaush. Up.*, i, 1.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, vi, 1, 1. <sup>3</sup> *Mund. Up.*, 1, 2, 12. There are several other references in the *Upanishads*.

<sup>4</sup> *Chhānd. Up.*, iv, 4, 4. <sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, v, 11, 7.

<sup>6</sup> Upakosala in *Chhānd. Up.*, iv, 10, 1, 2; Satyakāma in *Chhānd. Up.*, iv, 4, 5.

<sup>7</sup> *Chhānd. Up.*, iv, 10, 1. <sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, iv, 4, 5. <sup>9</sup> *Ibid.*, iv, 3, 5.

<sup>10</sup> *Bṛih. Ār. Up.*, iii, 1, 2. <sup>11</sup> *Chhānd. Up.*, viii, 15, 1. <sup>12</sup> *Bṛih. Ār. Up.*, iii, 3, 1; iii, 7, 1.

celebrated teachers. Renowned teachers also itinerated from place to place,<sup>1</sup> and there were those to whom pupils came from all sides 'as waters run downwards, as the months go to the year'.<sup>2</sup> As a rule, however, a student remained in the house of his teacher till the conclusion of his studies, when he entered upon married life. On his dismissal the pupil received admonition from his teacher. 'After<sup>3</sup> having taught the *Veda*, the teacher instructs the pupil: "Say what is true. Do thy duty. Do not neglect the study of the *Veda*. After having brought to thy teacher his proper reward, do not cut off the line of children. Do not swerve from the truth. Do not swerve from duty. Do not neglect what is useful. Do not neglect greatness. Do not neglect the learning and teaching of the *Veda*,"' etc. In some cases, however, the student might choose to become a life-long pupil of his teacher,<sup>4</sup> and in others to retire to the woods as a forest hermit, or *vānaprastha*.<sup>5</sup>

In the *Dharma Sūtras*, as we have seen, there are rules laid down for the conduct of both teachers and pupils. After initiation the pupil was received into the household of his teacher. Sometimes, of course, the teacher might be his own father. But even in other cases he became, as it were, a member of the teacher's family, and the teacher was bidden to love him as his own son. The pupil was, however, subjected to a rigid discipline and was under certain obligations towards his teacher. He should remain with his teacher as long as his course lasted, and not dwell with anybody else.<sup>6</sup> The practice of wandering from teacher to teacher which is referred to in the *Upanishads*, as mentioned above, was either irregular or else was found to be attended with abuses, and afterwards restricted.

Certain menial services had to be performed by the pupil

<sup>1</sup> *Kaush. Up.*, iv, 1. <sup>2</sup> *Taitt. Up.*, 1, 4, 3. <sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, i, 11. <sup>4</sup> *Brih. Ār. Up.*, ii, 23, 2. <sup>5</sup> *Chhānd. Up.*, ii, 23, 1. <sup>6</sup> *Gautama*, iii, 5.

for his teacher. These included the fetching of water and collecting of fuel, and sweeping the place round the fire. Begging for his food was also a duty which the student had to perform.<sup>1</sup> Food might be accepted from men of all castes except 'Abhiśastas and outcastes'.<sup>2</sup> It was to be demanded if possible from strangers, but if no alms were to be obtained in that way the student might beg in the houses of his relations or even of his teacher.<sup>3</sup> When he returned from his begging tour the student had to announce to his teacher what he had received, and after receiving his permission he might eat according to the prescribed rules, 'in silence, contented, and without greed'.<sup>4</sup> In the Middle Ages in Europe we read of some students in the universities subsisting by means of begging; but India far surpassed that by making it a rule for all students, and even under modern conditions it is not at all uncommon for students to find their support in this way.

There were rules for the respect due from pupil to teacher. Strict obedience was enjoined, unless the teacher ordered the pupil to do some evil which involved loss of caste.<sup>5</sup> The pupil was on no account to contradict the teacher and was always to occupy a seat or couch lower than the teacher.<sup>6</sup> He was always to rise in the morning before his teacher was up, and retire to rest at night after him.<sup>7</sup> If spoken to by the teacher he must, if lying or sitting, rise from his couch or seat before he answered, and when called by the teacher was to approach him even though he could not see him. If he saw the teacher standing or sitting in a lower place, or to the leeward or windward, he was to rise and change his position<sup>8</sup> If the teacher walked, the student was to walk after him.<sup>9</sup> The

<sup>1</sup> Āpastamba, i, 1. <sup>2</sup> Gautama, ii, 1. <sup>3</sup> Ibid., iii, 37. <sup>4</sup> Ibid., ii, 39-41.

<sup>5</sup> Āpastamba, i, 1. <sup>6</sup> Ibid., i, 1. <sup>7</sup> Gautama, ii, 21. <sup>8</sup> Ibid., ii, 25-7.

<sup>9</sup> Ibid., ii, 28.

16.6.707

STATE INSTITUTE OF EDUCATION  
PUNJAB

teacher's name was not to be pronounced by the pupil, but if it was necessary to indicate it the pupil must do so by using a synonymous term.<sup>1</sup> Every morning the feet of the teacher were to be embraced by the pupil.<sup>2</sup> There were also rules enjoining respect for the sons and wives and other relatives of the teacher. In Manu these rules are even further elaborated.<sup>3</sup>

The teacher was also under obligation to fulfil his duty towards the pupil; not only was he to love him as his own son, but he was to give him full attention in the teaching of the sacred science, and withhold no part of it from him.<sup>4</sup> He was not to use the pupil for his own purposes except in times of distress. After the rite of initiation had been performed his first duty was to instruct the pupil in the rules of personal purification, of conduct, of the fire worship, and of the twilight devotions. There is a passage in Manu<sup>5</sup> referring to the behaviour of the teacher towards his pupil which contains some excellent advice. It runs as follows:

'Created beings must be instructed in what concerns their welfare without giving them pain, and sweet and gentle speech must be used by a teacher who desires to abide by the sacred law. He, forsooth, whose speech and thoughts are pure and ever perfectly guarded, gains the whole reward which is conferred by the *Vedānta*. Let him not, even though in pain, speak words cutting others to the quick; let him not injure others in thought or deed; let him not utter speeches which make others afraid of him, since that will prevent him from gaining heaven.'

A development of the relation between teacher and pupil was the exaltation of the teacher to such a position of reverence that he was worshipped by his pupil. In the schools

<sup>1</sup> Gautama, ii, 18, 23. <sup>2</sup> Ibid., 1, 52. <sup>3</sup> See Manu, Ch. ii.

<sup>4</sup> Apastamba, i, 2. <sup>5</sup> Manu, ii, 159-61

of the early *Vedānta* the teacher, or *guru*, was always one who was himself supposed to have reached emancipation, and thus to have come to the realization that he is Brāhmaṇ. In his devotion, or *bhakti* for Brāhmaṇ it was but a short step for the pupil to feel *bhakti* also for the *guru*, who was thus identified with Brāhmaṇ. This is referred to as early as the *Svetāśvatara Upanishad*<sup>1</sup> (perhaps about the fourth century B.C.), but it received a great emphasis in all the *bhakti* sects (Vaishṇava, Śaiva, or other) from at least the seventh century A.D. In these the disciple is taught to worship his *guru* as God. This was, of course, an honour paid to a religious teacher, but it had an effect upon the relation of all pupils and teachers, and helps to explain the high respect which students of today have even for a teacher of secular subjects.

The foregoing account shows us an interesting and pleasing picture of the relationship of pupil and teacher in India dating back to many centuries before Christ. The pupil was under a somewhat vigorous discipline, but there was nothing harsh or brutal about it, and a high ideal of moral life and character was held before both pupil and teacher. The latter had no mercenary motive to impel him to teach, but was to perform his office solely as a duty which he owed towards others and his pupil in particular; and the pupil, on the other hand, was trained to a simple life, whether he was rich or poor, and habits of discipline, reverence, and self-respect were inculcated.

*Punishments*.—The teachers in old times were against harsh punishments. Gautama says,<sup>2</sup> ‘As a rule the pupil shall not be punished corporally. If no other course is possible he may be corrected with a thin rope or cane. If the teacher strikes him with any other instrument he shall be punished by the king’. Manu also allows<sup>3</sup> that a

<sup>1</sup> *Svetāś. Up.*, vi, 23. <sup>2</sup> Gautama, ii, 42-4. <sup>3</sup> Manu, viii, 299, 300.

pupil who has committed faults 'may be beaten with a rope or split bamboo, but on the back part of the body only, never on a noble part; he who strikes them otherwise will incur the same guilt as a thief'. Āpastamba mentions<sup>1</sup> as punishments, 'frightening, fasting, bathing in cold water, and banishment from the teacher's presence'.

*Moral Discipline*.—Rigid rules were laid down for the conduct of pupils. These included hygienic, moral and religious precepts and the regulation of good manners. It was the student's duty to bathe daily, and to avoid<sup>2</sup> 'honey, meat, perfumes, garlands, sleep in the daytime, ointments, collyrium, a carriage, shoes, a parasol, love, anger, covetousness, perplexity, garrulity, playing musical instruments, bathing (for mere pleasure), cleaning the teeth, elation, dancing, singing, calumny, and terror,' and all pungent foods. In the presence of his teacher he must not cover his throat, cross his legs, or lean against a wall or stretch out his feet.<sup>3</sup> 'Tongue, arms, and stomach' were to be kept in subjection.<sup>4</sup> Spitting, laughing, yawning, and cracking the joints of the fingers were also forbidden.<sup>5</sup> The pupil was enjoined always to speak the truth, and to avoid bitter speeches.<sup>6</sup> He was always to speak in a respectful manner of superiors.<sup>7</sup> Gambling, 'low service' (perhaps menial service other than that prescribed), taking things not offered, and injuring animate beings were also unlawful for a student.<sup>8</sup> All Brāhmans were forbidden to use spirituous liquors.<sup>9</sup> Chastity was strictly enjoined, and the student was not even to gaze at nor touch women.<sup>10</sup> In the morning and evening the pupil was bidden to perform his devotions outside the village. 'Silent he shall stand during the former, and sit during the latter, from

<sup>1</sup> Āpastamba, i, 2. <sup>2</sup> Gautama, ii, 13; Manu, ii, 177, 178. <sup>3</sup> Gautama, ii, 14. <sup>4</sup> Ibid., ii, 22. <sup>5</sup> Ibid., ii, 15. <sup>6</sup> Ibid., ii, 19; Manu, ii, 179. <sup>7</sup> Gautama, ii, 24. <sup>8</sup> Ibid., ii, 17. <sup>9</sup> Ibid., ii, 20. <sup>10</sup> Ibid. ii, 16.

(the time when one) light (is still visible) until (the other) light (appears).<sup>1</sup> Oblations were also to be offered morning and evening to the sacred fire.<sup>2</sup>

The *Upanishads* show us the theory of the four *āśramas*, or stages of life in process of formation, though some scholars hold that the *āśramas* were already fully recognized<sup>3</sup> as early as the time of the oldest *Upanishads*. The word *āśrama* (from the root *śram*, to exert oneself or to perform austerities) means first of all a place where austerities are performed, or a hermitage, and secondly, the action of performing austerities. So the period of studentship of the *brahmachārī* was regarded as a time of discipline, or an *āśrama*. But the Brāhmanical system tended to extend the idea of *āśrama* over the whole life. Thus after the period of studentship a young man might enter upon the second stage, that of a *grihastha*, or householder. Then after having brought up a family and done his duty in the world he could enter upon the life of a *vānaprashtha*, or forest hermit, and later become a *sanyāsi*, or wandering ascetic, who had separated himself from all attachment to the world, and, having attained the knowledge of the *ātman*, waited only for death to bring about his final emancipation. It was only gradually that this complete theory of the four *āśramas* was worked out, but when this was done the whole of life was looked upon as an education for the life beyond with four distinct stages, of which the life of studentship was only the first, though we cannot tell to what extent the practice corresponded to the theory, and it would seem likely that the ideal was never fully attained except by the few.

*Clothes*.—There were regulations for the clothing of those who had become students.<sup>4</sup> The girdle, or sacred cord, worn after initiation varied in material according to

<sup>1</sup> Gautama, ii, 11. <sup>2</sup> Ibid., ii, 8. <sup>3</sup> S. K. Das, p. 76, <sup>4</sup> Gautama, i, 15-17.

caste. For the Brāhmaṇa it was to be of *munja* grass; for the Kshatriya, a bow string; and for the Vaiśya, a woollen or hempen thread. The upper garments were to be skins of animals, again varying according to caste, and, respectively the skin of a black buck, a spotted deer, or a he-goat. For lower garments hemp, flax, or wool, or the inner bark of a tree were prescribed. Gautama says that these under-garments might also be of undyed cotton cloth, but if dyed the garment of a Brāhmaṇa should be dyed with red dye from a tree, and those of the other two castes with madder and turmeric respectively. The staves carried varied also according to caste, reaching, in the case of a Brāhmaṇa, to the crown of his head; in the case of a Kshatriya, to the forehead; and in the case of Vaiśya, to the tip of the nose. The hair might be shaved or worn braided on the top, or there might be merely one lock left on the crown. The arrangement of hair was probably regulated by the custom of the family, school, or country.

*Fees*.—It was considered a duty for Brāhmaṇas to teach, and all the time the pupil was under instruction the teacher was forbidden to accept a fee. When, however, the course was ended it was the duty of the pupil to offer a present to his preceptor. Except possibly in the case of rich pupils it could never have been in any sense an adequate remuneration for services performed. Manu says,<sup>1</sup> ‘He who knows the sacred law must not present any gift to his teacher before the *samāvartana* (rite performed by the student on returning home), but when, with the permission of his teacher, he is about to take the (final) bath, let him procure a present for the venerable man according to his ability, viz., a field, a cow, a horse, a parasol and shoes, a seat, grain, even vegetables, and thus give pleasure to his teacher’.

*Initiation*.—The *Satapatha Brāhmaṇa* contains an

<sup>1</sup> Manu, ii, 245, 246.

account of the *Upanayana*, or initiation, of the Brāhmanical student.<sup>1</sup> ‘He says, “I have come for *brahmachārya*” (studentship); he thereby reports himself to the Brāhman. He says, “Let me be a *brahmachārī*” (student); he thereby makes himself over to the Brāhman. He (the teacher) then says, “What is thy name?”....He then takes his right hand with. “Indra’s disciple thou art; Agni is thy teacher; I am thy teacher, ON.N.” He then commits himself to the beings: “To Prajāpati I commit thee, to the god Savitṛi I commit thee....To the waters, to the plants I commit thee .... To Heaven and Earth I commit thee....To all beings I commit thee for security from injury. Thou art a *brahmachārī*....sip water....do thy work....put on fuel....do not sleep....sip water.”’ ‘Sip water’ is explained as meaning ‘sip ambrosia’. ‘He thus encloses him on both sides with ambrosia.’ ‘He then recites to him (teaches him) the *sāvitṛī*.’

There were many sacred rites or sacraments (*samskāras*) to be performed from the time of conception onwards. The *upanayana*, or initiation ceremony, was that sacrament by which a lad of the three ‘twice born’ castes entered upon studentship. Gautama says,<sup>2</sup> ‘The initiation of a Brāhman shall ordinarily take place in his eighth year. (It may also be performed) in the ninth or fifth (years) for the fulfilment of (some particular) wish. The number of years (is to be calculated) from conception. That (initiation) is the second birth .... The initiation of a Kshatriya (shall ordinarily take place) in the eleventh (year after conception), and that of a Vaiśya in the twelfth. Up to the sixteenth year the time for the *sāvitṛī* (initiation) of a Brāhman has not passed. Nor (for the initiation) of a Kshatriya up to the twentieth year. (And the limit for that) of a Vaiśya (extends) two years beyond (the latter term). The other *Sūtras* contain similar

<sup>1</sup> *Satap. Br.* xi, 3, 3. <sup>2</sup> Gautama, i, 5-14.

regulations. The age fixed was no doubt regarded as the ideal to be aimed at, though we see that considerable latitude was permitted. A young Brāhmaṇa was thus about seven years of age (according to our reckoning) when he entered upon the obligations of studentship, and this age is that which has been considered a suitable one by many educationists. It was expressly provided in a later verse that a child should not be made to recite Vedic verses before initiation,<sup>1</sup> but whether this excluded all study cannot be said. Why a later age was prescribed for Kṣatriyas and Vaiśyas to commence their studies is not quite clear. They were of course not expected to attain to the same proficiency in the Vedic learning as the young Brāhmaṇa, as he alone could perform the sacrificial ritual, and certain portions of the sacred knowledge were reserved for him, and their course was, therefore, it may be supposed, not expected to last as long as his. But in this case we should have expected them to have started at the same time and to have left their studentship at an earlier age, especially as they had also to learn their own particular crafts. It seems probable, however, that the difference in age was to emphasize the supposed intellectual superiority of the Brāhmaṇa, who was thus ready to begin study at a younger age than his non-Brāhmaṇa fellows. But it may also have been due to the fact<sup>2</sup> that the young Brāhmaṇa often commenced his study at home with his father.

*Length of study.*—It early became recognized that for the study of the Vedic learning a long period of studentship was necessary. In the *Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa* we read:<sup>3</sup>

'Bharadvāja lived through three lives in the state of a religious student. Indra approached him when he was lying old and decrepit, and said to him, "Bharadvāja, if I give thee a fourth life, how wilt thou enjoy it?" "I will

<sup>1</sup> Gautama, ii, 55,   <sup>2</sup> S. K. Das, p. 72.   <sup>3</sup> *Taitt. Br.*, iii 10, 11, 3.

lead the life of a religious student," he replied. He (Indra) showed him three mountain-like objects, as it were unknown. From each of them he took a handful, and calling to him, "Bharadvāja," he said, "These are the three *Vedas*. The *Vedas* are infinite. This is what thou hast studied during these three lives. Now there is another thing which thou hast not studied; come and learn it. This is the universal science . . . He who knows this (*ya evam veda*) conquers a world as great as he would gain by the triple Vedic science."<sup>1</sup>

In the *Upanishads* also the necessity for a long period of studentship is recognized. Thus Indra is said to have lived with Prajāpati as a pupil no less than one hundred and five years.<sup>2</sup> The actual duration of studentship was coming to be recognized as twelve years.<sup>3</sup> During the period of twelve years we are told that Śvetaketu studied all the *Vedas*, which differs from the later regulation of twelve years for each *Veda*. In the case of Śvetaketu, however, it may have been the hymns of the three *Vedas* that he learned, as this is what his father expected from him.<sup>3</sup>

According to the *Sūtras* the length of the course varied according to the number of *Vedas* studied. 'He shall remain a student for twelve years in order to study one *Veda*. Or if he studies all the *Vedas*, twelve years for each. Or during as long a period as he requires for learning them.'<sup>4</sup> Thus if all four *Vedas* were studied, the length of the course might be forty-eight years. Some of the authorities only recognize three *Vedas* (excluding the *Atharvaveda*), but even thirty-six years seems a long enough course even for the most enthusiastic. A great part of the work consisted of the committal to memory of the sacred texts and other writings, and the enormous

<sup>1</sup> *Cāhānd. Up.*, viii, ii, 3. <sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, iv, 10, 1; vi, 1, 2. <sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, vi, 7, 2.

<sup>4</sup> *Gautama* ii, 45-7.

bulk of these must have necessitated a long period of study. It seems hardly possible to believe that more than a few students continued their studies as long as even thirty-six years. Probably most were satisfied with the twelve years required for studying one *Veda*, and the twelve years prescribed for each of the *Vedas* may have been intended to emphasize their importance. Megasthenes, the Greek who visited India about 300 B.C., refers, however, to the Indian student spending thirty-seven years in study.

After the course was completed the pupil performed certain bathing ceremonies, and was called a *snātaka*, that is, one who has bathed, and he was now ready to enter upon another of the four *āśramas*. In most cases he would marry and become a *grīhastha*, but some passed at once to the state of a *vānaprastha* or *sanyāsī*.

*Terms.*—The length of the annual term, according to the *Sūtras*, to be spent in *Veda* study was four and a half or five and a half months each year, and began usually at the full moon of the month *Śrāvana* (July-August).<sup>1</sup> It thus came during the rainy and cold seasons when the heat is less intense. Numerous holidays were also allowed, such as the new moon and full-moon days of certain months, and other days which were set apart for various religious ceremonies. The authorities have also a long list of restrictions,<sup>2</sup> which prohibit the reading of the *Veda* when certain occurrences take place, as, for instance, when the wind whirls up dust in the daytime, or when the wind is audible at night, when the sound of a drum or of a chariot or of a person in pain is heard, when there is the barking of dogs and jackals, or the chattering of monkeys, when the sky is a brilliant red, or there is a rainbow, etc. etc. Some of these restrictions were no doubt dictated by superstition, others because the various sounds or phenomena betokened impending danger

<sup>1</sup> Gautama, xvi, 1,2. <sup>2</sup> Ibid., xvi.

or discomfort, or because their distraction was not conducive to study. But all these possible hindrances must have reduced the actual time spent in learning.

*Curriculum.*—In the *Chhāndogya Upanishad* we have what seems to be an exhaustive list of all that was studied in those days, and which includes a good deal more than a knowledge of the three *Vedas*.<sup>1</sup>

‘Nārada approached Sanatkumāra and said, “Teach me, Sir!”’ Sanatkumāra said to him: “Please to tell me what you know; afterwards I shall tell you what is beyond.”

‘Nārada said: “I know the *Rigveda*, Sir, the *Yajurveda*, the *Sāmaveda*, as the fourth the *Ātharvana*, as the fifth the *Itihāsa-purāna* (the Bhārata); the *Veda* of the *Vedas* (grammar); the *Pitrya* (the rules for the sacrifices for the ancestors); the *Rāśi* (the science of numbers); the *Daiva* (the science of portents); the *Nidhi* (the science of time); *Vākovākya* (logic); the *Ekāyana* (ethics); the *Devavidyā* (etymology); the *Brahmavidyā* (pronunciation, śikshā, ceremonial, *kalpa*, prosody, *chhandas*); the *Bhūtavidyā* (the science of demons); the *Kshatravidyā* (the science of weapons); the *Nakshatravidyā* (astronomy); the *Sarpavidyā* and *Devajanavidyā* (the science of serpents or poisons, and the sciences of the *genii*, such as the making of perfumes, dancing, singing, playing and other fine arts). All this I know, Sir . . . .”’

The *Bṛihadāraṇyaka Upanishad* gives a somewhat similar list,<sup>2</sup> namely, ‘*Rigveda*, *Yajurveda*, *Sāmaveda*, *Atharvāṅgi-rasas*,<sup>3</sup> *Itihāsa* (legends), *Purāṇa* (cosmogonies), *Vidyā* (knowledge), the *Upanishads*, *Ślokas* (verses), *Sūtras* (prose rules), *Anuvyākhyānas* (glosses), *Vyākhyānas* (commentaries).

The extracts show how the curriculum of the Brāhmanic schools was developing.

<sup>1</sup> *Chhānd. Up.*, vii, 1, 1, 2. <sup>2</sup> *Bṛih. Ār. Up.*, ii, 4. 10.  
<sup>3</sup> i.e. the *Atharvaveda*.

The different *Vedas* arose, as we have seen, as collections primarily intended for different classes of priests. Every Brāhmanic family became devoted to the study of a particular *Veda*, and to a particular *sākhā* or recension of that *Veda*. The domestic rites of the family are performed according to the ritual described in the *Sūtras* connected with that *Veda*. It became then of the first importance that the exact text of that particular *Veda*, with the *Brāhmaṇas* and *Aranyakas* or *Upanishads*, as well as of the *Sūtras* attached to them, should be handed down from generation to generation. Now writing was probably not in use in India till 800 B.C., when it was introduced by traders coming by way of Mesopotamia. And although the complete Sanskrit alphabet on phonetic principles must have existed by 500 B.C., this being the alphabet recognized by the great grammarian Pāṇini, who flourished in the fourth century B.C., writing was first used chiefly for trading and other similar purposes and it was a long time before it came to be used for the sacred books.<sup>1</sup> Probably these were considered too holy to be committed to writing, and there was also the fear that they might get into the hands of unauthorized persons. In course of time they were all committed to writing, but oral tradition was still the method relied on for handing down the sacred text. Max Müller states<sup>2</sup> that even nowadays, when there are not only manuscripts but also a printed text, the *Vedas* are still passed on in the Brāhmanic families by oral tradition. When one considers the enormous bulk of the sacred literature it would seem an almost impossible task for it to have been preserved all through so many centuries in this way. Still we know it was done and is being done down to the present time. We need not be surprised at the

<sup>1</sup> For writing in India, see T. W. Rhys Davids, *Buddhist India*, p. 107ff. <sup>2</sup> *Lectures on the Origin of Religion*, ch. iii.

long period of twelve years which was considered necessary to become acquainted with even one *Veda*. Max Müller quotes<sup>1</sup> from a letter which he received in 1878 from an Indian gentleman giving an account of the system as it was then. A student of a *Rigveda sākhā*, if sharp and assiduous, takes about eight years to learn the *Daśa-granthas*, the ten books, which consist of (1) the *Sāmhitā* or the hymns; (2) the *Brāhmaṇa*, the prose treatise on sacrifices, etc.; (3) the *Āranyaka*, the forest-book; (4) the *Gṛihya-Sūtras*, the rules on domestic ceremonies; (5-10) the six *Angas*, treatises on pronunciation, astronomy, ceremonial, grammar, etymology, and metre. A pupil studies every day during the eight years, except on the holidays, the so-called *anadhyāya*, i.e. non-reading days. To complete the work in eight years he would have to learn about 12 *ślokas* of 32 syllables each, every day.

The Brāhmanic education started out with the idea of the teacher passing on to the pupil the traditions he had himself received, and this involved primarily the learning by heart of the sacred books but even from the earliest times the content of the education must have begun to widen out. The sacrificial ritual itself gave birth to some of the sciences. The elaborate rules for the construction of altars led to the sciences of geometry and algebra being developed, and as it was sometimes desired to erect a round altar covering the same area as a square one, problems like squaring the circle had to be faced.<sup>2</sup> The desire to find out propitious times and seasons for sacrifice and other purposes gave rise to astrology, from which astronomy developed. The dissection of sacrificial victims was the beginning of anatomy. The care taken to preserve the sacred text from corruption led to the development of

<sup>1</sup> *Lectures on the Origin of Religion*, ch. iii.

<sup>2</sup> R. C. Dutt, *Ancient India*, pp. 93ff.

grammar and philology, while the deep questions with regard to the universe and man's place in it, which were already being referred to in the *Sāmhitās* of the *Vedas*, and discussed more fully in the *Āranyakas* and *Upanishads*, led to the formation of elaborate philosophical systems and the study of logic. Medicine also received an early development in India as well as law.

Reference has already been made to the *Sūtras*. These are the characteristic Indian textbooks, and a great many were written on all sorts of subjects. According to the traditional Brāhmaṇ view there are six subjects, the study of which is necessary for the reading, understanding, or sacrificial employment of the *Veda*.<sup>1</sup> These are called the *Vedāngas* or 'members of the *Veda*'. They comprise the following subjects: *Śikṣā* (or phonetics); *Chandas* (or metre); *Vyākaraṇa* (or grammar); *Nirukta* (etymology or explanation of words); *Jyotiṣha* (or astronomy); and *Kalpa* (or ceremonial and religious practice). From these, however, other subjects developed, as, for example, the study of law from *Kalpa*.

The study of grammar must have been taken up in India from very early times.<sup>2</sup> Pāṇini, who is still the greatest recognized authority, was a native of Gandhāra in the north-west of India. He wrote his great grammatical work about the fourth century B.C., but refers to no less than sixty-four predecessors. His *Sūtras* containing the rules of grammar were in eight books, called the *Aṣṭadhyāyi*, comprising about four thousand aphorisms. With regard to his work Max Müller says that in grammar there is no more comprehensive collection and classification of all the facts of a language than we find in Pāṇini's *Sūtras*.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Max Müller, *Sans. Lit.*, p. 109. <sup>2</sup> See *Miscellaneous Essays*, T. H. Colebrooke (ed. 1873), ii, pp. 33ff.; Macdonell, *Sans. Lit.*, pp. 430ff.

<sup>3</sup> *Lectures on the Origin of Religion*, ch. iii.

Pāṇini was followed in the third century B.C. by Kātyāyana who wrote *Vārtikas*, or notes on some of Pāṇini's rules. Somewhat later came the *Mahābhāshya*, or great commentary, of Patanjali, which dates from about the second century B.C. These writers are the standard authorities on Sanskrit grammar, from whom there is, to Hindus, no appeal. Other authorities may be admitted where these writers are silent; but a deviation, even by an ancient writer, from their rules is considered a poetical licence or a barbarism. There have been many grammatical works written in India since these early writers, but they are all based on their work, and to this day the *Sūtras* of Pāṇini are committed to memory by students of Sanskrit in India. Lexicography was also cultivated in India at an early date, and the Sanskrit dictionaries are versified. The *Amara-kośa*, a metrical lexicon of Sanskrit words, was composed about A.D. 500, and is still committed to memory by Indian children. The Indian phonetics of the fifth century B.C. are such an accurate analysis of the elements of language that modern ages have had much to learn from them.

There were many early writers on astronomy in India, and their works were reduced to a concise and practical form by Āryabhata,<sup>1</sup> who was born at Pāṭaliputra, or Patna, in A.D. 476. He taught the rotation of the earth on its axis, and explained the causes of the eclipses of the sun and moon. Another famous Indian astronomer was Bhāskarāchārya, who was born in A.D. 1114. Closely allied to astronomy was mathematics, which is also dealt with in their works by early Indian astronomers. Algebra was also known, and it is to India that the West is indebted for its system of numerical notation, which came from India through the Arabs, and is often wrongly attributed to them. In some subjects, as for example, astronomy, Indian

<sup>1</sup> Macdonell, *Sans. Lit.*, pp. 434, 435.

scholars were influenced by Greek learning, but the exact connexion in all subjects has not been fully worked out.

As the material for the study of the subjects included in the six *Angas* increased and accumulated, such an enormous amount of matter would have to be worked through by intending students that it evidently became impossible for one student to acquire a mastery of all subjects, and so special schools arose for the study of special subjects.<sup>1</sup> In the Vedic schools the chief object was to acquire a complete mastery of the sacred text, and this in itself was a huge task even if only one *Veda* were attempted. At first the *Angas* were no doubt short treatises, but in course of time they grew enormously in bulk. Grammar, for example, was developed by Pāṇini and others, and their works became in themselves voluminous. Other sciences also came to be developed. If a student aimed at committing all the Vedic texts to memory, together with the accompanying *Angas*, he might succeed in his task, but he could hardly have gained a real understanding of the subject matter. He became simply a kind of walking library.

It must have become necessary at some time for those who wished to become masters of separate subjects to restrict the number of works which were learned by heart and specialize in some part of the field of knowledge. This is made clear by the state of Hindu learning in India in modern times. It is said that there are men called Vaidiks who can recite whole volumes of the sacred texts. But besides this there are specialists who have an expert knowledge of some part of the ancient learning, such as the performance of sacrifices, grammar, law, or astronomy. This specialization must have begun in very early times, as the work of the grammarians like Pāṇini shows. Thus

<sup>1</sup> For the beginnings of specialization, see Bühler, *S. B. E.*, Vol. XXV, pp. xlvi ff.

were formed special schools for various subjects, which include grammar, law and astronomy. This specialization began probably about the fifth century B.C. It is thought that law became a special subject to study at a somewhat later date than grammar or astronomy; but even in some of the *Dharma Sūtras* (*Vasishtha* and *Baudhāyana*) there are traces that the specialization had already begun. The *Mānava Dharmasāstra*, or Law Code of Manu, grew up in one of these special law schools.

The science of medicine also was developed in India at an early date.<sup>1</sup> One of the great authorities was Charaka, and he is said by a Chinese authority to have been the court physician of the Buddhist King Kanishka in the first century of our era. Another great name is that of Suśruta, who lived about the fourth or fifth century A.D. It is probable that the development of medical science owed something to the influence of Buddhism, with its strong regard for the sacredness of life and insistence on the law of kindness. Through Arabic channels Indian medical science had a great influence on the subject as studied and practised in Europe in the Middle Ages, and even in the eighteenth century the operation of rhinoplasty was borrowed from India by European surgery. Hindu physicians are called *Vaidyas*, and *Āyur-Vedic* medicine, as it is named, is still practised in India.

In philosophy we can trace the beginnings of the subject right back to the *Upanishads*, and even to the *Brāhmaṇas* and *Samhitās*. The six recognized systems or schools of philosophy began to develop before the beginning of the Christian era, and are in three pairs, each pair having close connexion. The *Pūrvamīmāṃsā* and the *Uttaramīmāṃsā* (or *Vedānta*) represent orthodox Brāhmaṇ thought. The former teaches the eternity of the *Veda* and explains the

<sup>1</sup> Macdonell, *Sans. Lit.*, pp. 435, 436.

meaning and value of the ‘Way of Works’, especially of sacrificial acts. The latter expounds the ‘Way of Knowledge’, and teaches that the All, or Brāhmaṇ, alone truly exists and is one, and the soul is Brāhmaṇ. The subject is synthesized with the object, ‘*Tat twam asi*’ (‘Thou art that’). The *Sāṅkhya* philosophy is atheistic, and teaches a species of dualism, and that salvation, or release from matter, is attained by a clear knowledge of the distinction between soul and matter. The *Yoga* is closely connected with the *Sāṅkhya*, but postulates a personal God; and advocates an elaborate system of postures and ascetic exercises as helpful in enabling the soul to reach the highest truth. The *Nyāya* philosophy deals with logic, but it is not so much a treatise of formal logic as an exposition of the way that salvation can be attained by the removal of false knowledge. The *Vaiśeṣika* presupposes a knowledge of the *Nyāya*, and often goes over the same ground. It contains a theory of atoms. The smallest and invisible particles are eternal in themselves, but not eternal as aggregates.

*Method.*—With regard to the method of teaching, Gautama tells us as follows:<sup>1</sup>

‘Taking hold with his right hand of the left hand of his teacher, but leaving the thumb free, the pupil shall address his teacher saying, “Venerable Sir, recite!” He shall fix his eyes and his mind on the teacher. He shall touch with *kuśa* grass the seat of the vital airs (i.e. the organs of sense located in his head). He shall thrice restrain his breath for the space of fifteen moments. And he shall seat himself on blades of *kuśa* grass the tops of which are turned to the east. The five *vyāhṛitis* (i.e. the mystic words *Bhūḥ*, *Bhuvaḥ*, *Svaḥ*, *Satyam*, and *Purushaḥ*) must each be preceded by the syllable *Om* and with *Satya*. Every morning the

<sup>1</sup> Gautama, i, 46ff.

feet of the teacher must be embraced by the pupil. And this must be done both at the beginning and at the end of a lesson in the *Veda*. After having received permission, the pupil shall sit down to the east or towards the north, and the *sāvitrī* must be recited. All these acts must be performed at the beginning of the instruction in the *Veda*. The syllable *Om* must precede the recitation of other parts of the *Veda* also.'

Meaningless and trivial as many of these regulations may seem to us, they were no doubt regarded as of great value by those who used them in those far-off days. They must have been intended to emphasize the great solemnity of the work in which pupil and teacher were engaged, and to impress upon the pupil the mysterious sacredness which was supposed to characterize the knowledge which was being passed on to him by his teacher. The first and foremost object which the teacher had before him was to hand down to the pupil the exact contents of the sacred books as he himself had received them, as well as of those sacrificial and other rules which it was necessary for the young Brähman to know in order to perform his priestly functions.

Max Müller quotes Professor R. G. Bhandarkar with regard to the wonderful arrangements which the Brähmans devised for the accurate preservation of the sacred text. These were far more complicated than anything the Massoretes ever dreamed of. In the *samhitā* arrangement the words were in their natural order and joined together according to the Sanskrit rules of *sandhi*. In the *pāda* arrangement the words were separate, that is, not united by *sandhi*, and the compounds also dissolved. In the *krama* arrangement the words were in the following order: 1, 2; 2, 3; 3, 4; 4, 5, etc., with *sandhi* between them. In the *jāta* arrangement the order was 1, 2, 2, 1, 1, 2; 2, 3, 3, 2, 2, 3;

3, 4, 4, 3, 3, 4, etc. In *ghana*, 1, 2, 2, 1, 1, 2, 3, 3, 2, 1, 1, 2, 3; 2, 3, 3, 2, 2, 3, 4, 4, 3, 2, 2, 3, etc. This was, no doubt, a later development, but it must have greatly added to the burden upon the pupil's power of memorizing, which even before was almost too heavy to be borne, and we must wonder how pupils could ever have been willing to submit to the monotonous task of learning by rote such an enormous mass of material. It certainly seems as though the powers of memorizing gained by this laborious process have been inherited by later generations, for it is no uncommon thing for a boy in India, even at the present day, to commit on his own initiative a whole textbook to memory, a task which most English boys would find unbearable.

To get a picture of how the task of rote-learning was carried on at least 500 B.C., we can refer to the *Prātiśākhya* of the *Rigveda*. This work is considered to belong to the fifth or sixth century B.C., that is, to about the same time as some of the earliest of the *Sūtras*. Max Müller, quoting this work,<sup>1</sup> says:

'In the fifteenth chapter there is a description of the method followed in the schools of ancient India. The teacher, we are told, must himself have passed through the recognized curriculum and have fulfilled all the duties of a Brāhmanical student (*brahmachāri*) before he is allowed to become a teacher, and he must teach only such students as submit to all the rules of studentship. He shall settle down in a proper place. If he has only one pupil or two, they should sit on his right side; if more, they must sit as there is room for them. At the beginning of each lecture the pupils embrace the feet of their teacher and say, Read, Sir. The teacher answers, *Om*, Yes, and then pronounces two words, or if it is a compound, one. When the teacher

<sup>1</sup> *Lectures on the Origin of Religion*, p. 159.

has pronounced one word, or two, the first pupil repeats the first word; but if there is anything that requires explanation, the pupil says, Sir; and after it has been explained to him (the teacher says) *Om*, Yes, Sir, In this way they go on till they have finished a *praśna* (question) which consists of three verses or, if they are verses of more than forty to forty-two syllables, of two verses. If they are *pankti* verses of forty to forty-two syllables each, a *praśna* may comprise either two or three; and if a hymn consists of one verse only, that is supposed to form a *praśna*. After the *praśna* is finished, they have all to repeat it once more, and then go on learning it by heart, pronouncing every syllable with the high accent. After the teacher has first told a *praśna* to his pupil on the right, the others go round him to the right, and this goes on till the whole *adhyāya* or lecture is finished, a lecture consisting generally of sixty *praśnas*. At the end of the last half-verse the teacher says, Sir, and the pupil replies, *Om*, Yes, Sir, repeating also the verses required at the end of a lecture. The pupils then embrace the feet of their teacher, and are dismissed. The *Pratisākhya* contains a number of minute rules besides as to repetition of words, etc.'

Besides the actual memorizing of the sacred books, we see that the teacher was in the habit of giving explanations when required by the pupil. We cannot say what this amounted to in the first place. In the case of the sacred books themselves many pupils were perhaps content simply to absorb their contents without fully understanding their meaning,<sup>1</sup> but when other subjects and sciences arose it would seem probable that explanation must have been given a much larger place. The *Sūtras* were composed in language so condensed that a considerable amount of explanation must have been necessary, and they were

<sup>1</sup> But see also pp. 7-8 as to the *Brāhmaṇas*.

studied together with a commentary. In the *Upanishads* we find that the philosophic teaching given there is often illustrated by parables from nature, of stories like that of Nachiketas visiting the abode of the dead. And in later works like the *Panchatantra* and the *Hitopadeśa* we find stories and fables given a very important place in the inculcation of moral truths. India is, in fact, the home of fable and allegory. If the Brāhmaṇ teachers, as seems likely, made use of this form of teaching in instructing their pupils there must have been something at least to interest and to relieve the monotony of the laborious process of learning by heart. The system of teaching was individual, and each pupil was separately instructed by the teacher, though there may have been occasions when the teacher explained something to all the pupils at the same time. There is a passage in Manu<sup>1</sup> which seems to imply that the son of the teacher sometimes helped his father by teaching in his father's stead, and perhaps from this arose the custom which we find in vogue in later times of the teacher being assisted in his work by some of the older pupils who acted as monitors. When the Brāhmaṇic system of education first arose writing was unknown in India, but later on, when writing came into use, the task of teaching it was added to the work of the teacher.

*Universities*.—From the most ancient times there existed in India Brāhmaṇic settlements, and in connexion with them *parishads*, or assemblies of learned Brāhmaṇs, which gave decisions on all points connected with the Brāhmaṇic religion and learning.<sup>2</sup> In the *Brihadāraṇyaka Upanishad* we read that Śvetaketu went to the *parishad* of the Panchālas.<sup>3</sup> Max Müller says<sup>4</sup> that according to modern writers a *parishad* ought to consist of twenty-one Brāhmaṇs,

<sup>1</sup> Manu, ii, 208. <sup>2</sup> R. C. Dutt, *Ancient India*. <sup>3</sup> *Brih. Ār. Up.*, vi, 2.

<sup>4</sup> Max Müller, *Sans. Lit.*, pp. 128-32.

well versed in philosophy, theology, and law. But in early periods it seems that a smaller number was sufficient. Gautama says<sup>1</sup> that a *parishad* shall consist of at least the ten following members, namely, four men who have completely studied the four *Vedas*, three men belonging to the three orders enumerated first, and three men who know different institutes of law. In *Vasishtha*<sup>2</sup> and *Baudhāyana* it is said that it shall consist of four men who each know one<sup>3</sup> of the four *Vedas*, a student of the *Mimāṃsā*, one who knows the *Angas*, one who recites the works on the sacred law, and three Brāhmans belonging to three different orders. The regulations in Manu are as follows:<sup>3</sup>

'If it is asked how it should be with respect to points of the law which have not been specially mentioned, the answer is, that that which Brāhmans who are *Sishṭas* propound, shall doubtlessly have legal force. Those Brāhmans must be considered *Sishṭas* who, in accordance with the sacred law, have studied the *Veda* together with its appendages, and are able to adduce proofs perceptible by the senses from the revealed texts. Whatever an assembly, consisting either of ten or of at least three persons who follow their prescribed occupations, declares to be law, the legal force of that one must not dispute. Three persons who each know one of the three principal *Vedas*, a logician, a *Mimāṃsaka*, one who knows the *Nirukta*, one who recites the institutes of the sacred law, and three men belonging to the first three orders, shall constitute a legal assembly, consisting of at least ten members. One who knows the *Rigveda*, one who knows the *Yajurveda*, and one who knows the *Sāmaveda*, shall be known to form an assembly consisting of at least three members and competent to decide doubtful points of law. Even that which one

<sup>1</sup> Gautama, xxviii, 48-51. <sup>2</sup> *Vas.*, iii, 20; *Baudh.*, i, 1, 5-13.

<sup>3</sup> Manu, xii, 108-13.

'Brāhmaṇa versed in the *Veda* declares to be law must be considered to have supreme legal force, but not that which is proclaimed by myriads of ignorant men.'

The ideal in ancient times thus seems to have been that the *parishad* should consist of at least ten persons, but a smaller number might be regarded as sufficient in case of necessity. Thus *Parāśara*, another ancient authority,<sup>1</sup> says that 'four or even three able men from amongst the Brāhmaṇas in a village, who know the *Veda* and keep the sacrificial fire, form a *parishad*. Or if they do not keep the sacrificial fire, five or three who have studied the *Vedas* and *Vedāngas*, and know the law, may well form a *parishad*. Of old sages who possess the highest knowledge of the divine self, who are twice-born, perform sacrifices and have purified themselves in the duties of the *Veda*, one also may be considered as a *parishad*'.

The composition of this assembly is interesting as showing how specialization in Vedic study had begun in very early times. Thus in Gautama, besides the four men who have completely studied the *Veda*—that is, men of the walking-library type—there are those who know the different *Dharma Sūtras*, besides the three representatives of the orders. In *Vasiṣṭha* and *Baudhāyana* the three specialists are a student of the *Mīmāṁsā*, that is, one who knows the sacrificial rules, one who knows the *Angas*, and one who recites the works on the sacred law. In Manu those who know the *Vedas* are reduced to three, and the specialists are a logician, a *Mīmāṁsaka*, one who knows the *Nirukta*, and one who recites the institute of the sacred law. No doubt the exact composition of the *parishad* may have varied in different places, but the growth of the specialization in studies seems to be clearly shown. The representatives of the three orders were a student, a house-

<sup>1</sup> Quoted by Max Müller, *Sans. Lit.*, pp. 128-32.

holder, and a hermit, or according to some authorities, a student, a householder, and an ascetic.

The *parishads* were in some respects like judicial assemblies and in others like ecclesiastical synods, but as those who composed them were most of them also teachers, they correspond to a certain extent to the associations of teachers in the Middle Ages of Europe, which developed into universities. Thus not only were different faculties represented, but even a student was a member of the *parishad*. The settlement of Brāhmans proficient in different branches of the ancient learning in various centres must have meant the gathering together also of a number of students who were receiving instruction from them, and thus these *parishads* would form the nucleus of something corresponding to a university. Some of the chief centres of learning are described in a separate chapter.

## CHAPTER IV

### VOCATIONAL EDUCATION

THE early Vedic schools for the training of priests seem to have been confined to the youths of the priestly class; and the Brāhmans kept in their families the ancient literature which forms the basis of all higher education.

In the earliest times, however, it is possible that knowledge and not descent<sup>1</sup> qualified a man to be a Brāhmaṇa and that only later did the guild of priests become a close corporation hardening into a caste.

Even in quite early times it is evident that many non-Brāhmans attained to a high degree of notoriety as men of wisdom. There was, for example, a certain king Janāka<sup>2</sup> of Videha who is referred to in the *Brāhmaṇas* and the *Upanishads* as gaining distinction in debates with learned Brāhmans. Other royal sages also are mentioned, like Chitra Gāngyāyani<sup>3</sup> and Ajātaśatru,<sup>4</sup> who were able to give Brāhmans instruction on deep questions of philosophy. In early days such instruction as young Kshatriyas and Vaiśyas received would be given by their fathers and confined to the duties of their particular calling in life. It probably marks the growing power of the Brāhmans that at some time the training of the young Kshatriyas and Vaiśyas came into their hands, and it became the recognized privilege of the Brāhmaṇa caste to give instruction. Even at the time when the hymns of the *Rigveda* were being composed it was the custom for the chieftains or nobles to have a Brāhmaṇa as a domestic priest or chaplain, called a *purohita*,<sup>5</sup> and it is easy to see how the instruction of the sons of his patron would come under his care, and that this

<sup>1</sup> S. K. Das, pp. 181ff. <sup>2</sup> *Satapatha Brāhmaṇa*, xi, 6, 2, 10. <sup>3</sup> *Kaushitaki Up.*, i. <sup>4</sup> *Bṛih. Ār. Up.*, ii, 1. <sup>5</sup> *Rigveda*, i, 1.

system would generally be extended to all the Aryan youth as the power of the Brāhmaṇ priesthood increased.

By the time that the earliest *Dharma Sūtras* which are extant were composed (circa 500 B.C.), the system was in full working order, and it had become customary<sup>1</sup> for Kshatriyas and Vaiśyas as well as for Brāhmaṇs, to be initiated with the sacred thread as a preliminary to entering upon the period of school life under Brāhmaṇ teachers, which was to occupy at least twelve years. The difference in the time of initiation and in the dress to be worn by the three twice-born castes, has already been referred to in a previous chapter.<sup>2</sup> The later age at which the Kshatriyas and Vaiśyas were supposed to start their schooling must be taken to indicate that its character was for them somewhat different from the instruction which a young Brāhmaṇ received. The latter was at school to be prepared for his future vocation as a priest and a teacher, and much that he would require to know would not only be useless to the youth of the other castes, but it is not likely that the Brāhmaṇs would wish to communicate all the mysteries of their priestly office to them. For the Kshatriyas and Vaiśyas 'studying the *Veda*' must as a general rule have meant much less than for the Brāhmaṇs. It may have included the memorizing of the Vedic hymns, and an acquaintance with the philosophic teaching of the *Upaniṣads*, and certain parts of the six *Angas*, such as were necessary for the understanding of the Vedic texts, or for the knowledge of duties to be performed in their adult life. It was an opportunity for them to become acquainted with the cultural inheritance of the race, and was also for them, as well as for the Brāhmaṇs, regarded as an *āśrama*, that is a period of moral and religious discipline, and a stage in the preparation not only for this life but for the life beyond.

<sup>1</sup> Gautama, i; Āpast, i, 1. <sup>2</sup> See pp. 25-8

*Prince and Soldiers.*—It seems likely that as time went on the study of the *Veda* for the Kshatriyas and Vaiśyas became still more attenuated, and that their education was more and more concentrated on those subjects which had a direct bearing on their future calling.

It has been shown in the previous chapter how the special schools of law and grammar, etc. began to grow out of the six *Angas* somewhere about the fifth century B.C. One of the *Angas* was called *Kalpa*, that is ceremonial and religious practice. In connexion with *Kalpa* the *Dharma Sūtras* were compiled. They contain not only the beginnings of law afterwards developed in the *Dharmaśāstras*, but also instruction in the duties of the king. This was no doubt the germ of the science of politics, which was later on expanded in the works known as *Nitiśāstras* and *Arthaśāstrias*.

In the *Dharma Sūtras* of Āpastamba, Baudhāyana, and Vasishṭha there is no mention of the subjects to be studied by the king, but in the *Dharma Sūtra* of Gautama,<sup>1</sup> it is said that he shall be 'fully instructed in the threefold sacred science and in logic'.<sup>2</sup> It further says<sup>3</sup> that the administration of justice shall be by the *Veda*, the *Dharmaśāstra*,<sup>4</sup> the *Angas* and the *Purāṇa*,<sup>5</sup> so that it may be presumed that the royal princes were expected to become acquainted with these also during their period of schooling. A knowledge of the use of arms and of military skill was, of course, necessary, and a great deal of the time of the young Kshatriyas must have been given to learning their duties as warriors. Already in the hymns of the *Rigveda* there is a passage<sup>6</sup> which appears to refer to military combats amongst young warriors, and as the Kshatriyas became

<sup>1</sup> Gautama, xi, 1. <sup>2</sup> Ibid., xi, 3. The word translated 'logic' is *Anvikṣiki* as in *Arthaśāstra*, ii, (see p. 53). <sup>3</sup> Gautama, xi, 19. <sup>4</sup> Bühler considers the word as probably an interpolation, for it was included in the *Angas* as part of *Kalpa*. <sup>5</sup> *Purāṇa*, i.e. ancient legendary tales. <sup>6</sup> *Rigveda*, iv, 42, 5.

marked off from the other castes as those whose function it was to fight for their protection, the practice of arms must have become more highly specialized. In the *Mahābhārata* we read<sup>1</sup> how the young Pāṇḍu and Kuru princes were instructed in the various kinds of military skill. This included fighting on horseback and on elephants, in chariots and on the ground. The weapons used were the club, the sword, the lance, the spear, the dart and above all the bow. The preceptor of these young princes in the use of arms is said to have been, not as we might have supposed, a Kshatriya warrior, but a learned Brāhmaṇa, named Drona. The purpose of the author may have been to exalt the dignity of the Brāhmaṇa caste by showing how the Kshatriyas learned even their own special functions from the Brāhmaṇas.

In the *Rāmāyaṇa*<sup>2</sup> of Vālmīki we read with regard to Rāma and his brothers:

'And among all those princes, the eldest, Rāma, like unto Ketu, and the special delight of his father, became the object of general regard, even as the Self-created Himself. And all of them were versed in the *Vedas*, and heroic, and intent upon the welfare of others. And all were accomplished in knowledge and endowed with virtues, and among them all the exceedingly puissant Rāma, having truth for prowess, was the desire of every one, and spotless like unto the Moon himself. He could ride on elephants and horses, and was an adept in managing cars (chariots), and he was ever engaged in the study of arms and aye occupied in ministering unto his sire... Those best of men, ever engaged in the study of the *Vedas*, were accomplished in the art of archery, and always intent upon ministering unto their father.'

<sup>1</sup> M. N. Dutt's translation, pp. 190ff. <sup>2</sup> M. N. Dutt's translation, *Bālakāṇḍam*, pp. 51ff.

This extract brings out what seem to be the chief aims of education in the case of young Kshatriyas in early times, namely the study of *Vedas*, military skill, and right moral conduct. There is no mention of any special training for the performance of their royal duties, but silence in a work of this kind is of little value as evidence.

At some time, however, between 500 B.C. and the rise of the Mauryan dynasty (321 B.C.) there seems to have been a considerable development of Kshatriya education. The science of politics had grown up, and much more attention was given to the education of young princes for the duties of their high calling. We have a valuable picture of this education in the *Arthaśāstra* of Kauṭilya. The number of authorities, whose difference of opinion he quotes and sometimes refutes, shows how the science of politics had developed, and amongst other things there was a considerable interest as to what was the best kind of education for a young prince to receive. It is not impossible that this development in royal education may have been a result of the desire of some Indian rulers to improve the efficiency of their kingdoms in view of the possibilities of Persian invasion from the west, for the Indus valley had been annexed and formed into a satrapy by Darius (521-485 B.C.) and the raid of Alexander (327-324 B.C.) would have stimulated this desire. But whether this was so or not, it seems certain that a considerable development of royal education took place about this period.

Kauṭilya, to whom the *Arthaśāstra*<sup>1</sup> mentioned is ascribed, is also known as Chāṇakya. He was the Brāhmaṇ who overthrew the Nanda dynasty and placed Chandragupta Maurya on the throne. If he was the author, the work would be dated somewhere between 321 and 296 B.C.

<sup>1</sup> Translation by R. Shāmaśāstry.

The authenticity,<sup>1</sup> however, has been disputed, and the book may have been based on the teaching of Kauṭilya, although not by his hand, and may belong in its present form perhaps to the first century B.C., while incorporating older matter. In any case it is a remarkable document, and throws a most valuable light on the system of administration and social life at the time of the Mauryan Empire. It is a manual of political science, Machiavellian in its principles, for the use of kings, and amongst other things outlines an educational curriculum for royal princes.

In the *Arthaśāstra* of Kauṭilya it is held<sup>2</sup> that there are four sciences which should be included in the royal education. These are *Ānvikshiki*, the triple *Vedas*, *Vārta* and *Dandanīti*. *Ānvikshiki* is defined as comprising the *Sāṅkhya*, *Yoga*, and *Lokāyata* philosophies. *Vārta* includes a knowledge of agriculture, cattle-breeding, and trade. *Dandanīti* is the science of government, including a knowledge of criminal law. It seems, however, that the authorities were not agreed as to the number of the sciences to be taught, and though Kauṭilya holds that the four sciences mentioned above should be studied, he says that others held different opinions. The school of Manu (Mānava) held that philosophy was only a special branch of Vedic study, and that, therefore, there were only three sciences to be studied. The school of Bṛihaspati held that there were only two sciences, *Vārta* and *Dandanīti*; for *Veda* study, they said, was 'only an abridgement for a man experienced in temporal affairs', which means, presumably, that a young prince or Kshatriya would not have the time to obtain more than a very casual acquaintance with the *Vedas*. The school of Uśanas declared that there was only one science, the science of *Dandanīti*, all others having their beginnings in that.

<sup>1</sup>For authenticity see *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society*, 1916, p. 130. <sup>2</sup>*Arthaśāstra*, ii.

Having thus outlined the curriculum, Kauṭilya in another chapter<sup>1</sup> gives some further particulars with regard to his scheme of education. Although he admits four sciences as enumerated above, he says that the first three are dependent on *Danḍanīti*; for *Danḍa* (punishment) which alone can procure safety and security of life, is, in its turn, dependent on discipline.

'Discipline,' he says, 'is of two kinds: artificial and natural; for instruction can only render a docile being conformable to the rules of discipline, and not an undocile being. The study of sciences can tame only those who are possessed of such mental faculties as obedience, hearing, grasping, retentive memory, discrimination, inference, and deliberation, but not others devoid of such faculties.' By natural discipline he means, it would seem, the discipline which arises from the docility of the pupil; for those who have not this there is the artificial discipline of punishment.

'Sciences,' he continues, 'shall be studied, and their precepts strictly observed under the authority of specialist teachers. Having undergone the ceremony of tonsure, the student shall learn the alphabet and arithmetic. After investiture with the sacred thread, he shall study the triple *Vedas*, the science of *Ānvikshiki* under teachers of acknowledged authority, the science of *Vārta* under government superintendents, and the science of *Danḍanīti* under theoretical and practical politicians.'

It would seem from this that the last two studies were to be learnt in very close contact with their practice in actual life.

With regard to the length of the course we are told that 'the prince shall observe celibacy till he becomes sixteen years old. Then he shall observe the ceremony of tonsure

<sup>1</sup> *Arthaśāstra*, v.

and marry'. If the investiture with the sacred thread took place, in accordance with the regulations given in the *Dharmasūtras*, in the eleventh year after conception, the course would thus last six years, which is much shorter than the twelve years prescribed as necessary for the *brahmachārī* to learn one *Veda*. It is, of course, not impossible that the study of *Vārta* and *Dandanīti* at least may have been continued even after marriage.

During the period of study the young prince was to be placed under the strict supervision of his teachers. 'In maintaining efficient discipline he shall ever and invariably keep company with aged professors of sciences, in whom alone discipline has its firm root.'

The hours of study were thus planned out. 'He shall spend the forenoon in receiving lessons in military arts concerning elephants, horses, chariots, and weapons, and the afternoon in hearing the *Itihāsa*.' *Itihāsa* is said to include *Purāṇa*, *Itivṛitta* (history), *Ākhyāyikā* (tales), *Udāharana* (illustrative stories), *Dharmaśāstra*, and *Arthaśāstra*. The first four would include mythological and epic tales, and those moral fables and stories such as were collected (afterwards) in the *Panchatantra* and the *Hitopadeśa*.<sup>1</sup> The last two, namely, *Dharmaśāstra* and *Arthaśāstra*, include what would now be termed law and political science, and would cover the theoretical parts of *Vārta* and *Dandanīti*.

'During the rest of the day and night he shall not only receive new lessons and revise old lessons, but also hear over again what has not been clearly understood.'

It is curious that in this outline of the day's work there is no mention of the study of the *Veda* or philosophy. One cannot help wondering, in spite of the opinion of Kauṭilya that these subjects should be included in the programme of

<sup>1</sup> See p. 42

studies, whether they received very serious attention in the case of the young princes.

Kauṭilya goes on to say that 'from hearing ensues knowledge; from knowledge steady application (*yoga*) is possible; and from application, self-possession (*ātmavattā*) is possible. This is what is meant by efficiency in learning (*vidyāsāmarthyam*). The king who is well educated and disciplined in sciences, devoted to good government of his subjects, and bent on doing good to all people, will enjoy the earth unopposed.'

The programme of education thus outlined is by no means an unworthy scheme for the education of a young prince. It shows the wonderful powers which these early Brāhmaṇa educators had of adapting their system to the needs of the pupils, and of devising a vocational training for the sons of noble families. It is not clear whether this education was confined to those who were the scions of ruling houses, or whether other young Kshatriyas shared in its advantages, but it would seem not unlikely that noble families would seek to give their sons an education at least approximating to that which princes received.

In the Law of Manu, which is considered to date, in its present form, from about A.D. 200, though based on an older *Mānava Dharma Sūtra*, it is said with regard to the education of a king,<sup>1</sup> 'From those versed in the three *Vedas* let him learn the threefold sacred science, the primeval science of government, the science of dialectics, and the knowledge of the Supreme Soul; from the people the theory of various trades and professions'. According to the *Arthaśāstra*<sup>2</sup> the school of *Mānava* held that there were three sciences to be studied, namely, the *Veda* and the philosophy based on them, the science of government (*Danḍanīti*) and agriculture and trade (*Vārta*), so that these

<sup>1</sup> Manu, vii, 43.   <sup>2</sup> See p. 52

three are presumably covered by the subjects mentioned in the Law of Manu.

It is to be presumed that, as in the ordinary Brāhmanic study, the work was based on a knowledge of the grammar of the Sanskrit language. The story contained in the *Kathā-sarit-sāgara*<sup>1</sup> of the king who did not know his Sanskrit grammar seems to show that some royal pupils did not always find it easy to master all its intricacies.

With regard to textbooks those used in the ordinary Brāhman schools for Vedic study would serve also for the Kshatriyas in so far as they studied the same subjects, but there were two developments which arose to meet the needs of the special training required by them. We have already referred to the *Nītiśāstra* or *Arthaśāstra* as a manual of political science. The *Arthaśāstra* of Kauṭilya, from which we have quoted above, is an example, and there were probably many which have not survived. This *Arthaśāstra* contains a detailed account of the duties of the king and of his officials, and of the way the administration was carried on, and in connexion with the work of the superintendents of the different departments contains a good deal of information with regard to agriculture and trade, and thus included probably what was to be taught to the princes under the heading of *Vārta*. It also contains several chapters on the military science of those days. The *Nītiśāra*, or *Essence of Conduct*, is a metrical treatise by an author named Kāmandaka. It is evidently based on the teaching of the *Arthaśāstra* of Kauṭilya, and contains in a condensed form many of the principles of policy taught in the *Arthaśāstra*. It belongs to about the third century A.D., or perhaps later. But the Brāhman preceptors, finding perhaps that their royal or noble pupils did not always take kindly to the effort of studying the political wisdom

<sup>1</sup> *Kathā-sarit-sāgara*, Tar. vi, 108-64.

of the *Arthaśāstra*, devised the plan of using fables and stories for the teaching of this science. 'It<sup>1</sup> is a combination highly characteristic of a civilization of which the two most important features were the intellectual passion and subtlety of the Brāhmaṇ Schools on the one hand, and the village life of a humorous people on the other.' The *Panchatantra* existed in the first half of the sixth century A.D., but the *Tantrākhyāyikā*, which is considered to be its most original and earliest form, was composed many centuries earlier.<sup>2</sup> It is introduced with the story of a certain king who had three idle and stupid sons. He wished to find a teacher for them, and at last met with a certain Brāhmaṇ, who promised in six months to give the young princes such instruction that they would surpass all others in the knowledge of right conduct. For the accomplishment of his object he composed the *Panchatantra*. It consists of a series of fables which illustrate various points of moral conduct, and expose many human vices, like the intriguing of courtiers and the faithlessness of women. The Brāhmans themselves do not escape satire, which is levelled, for example, against their avarice and hypocrisy. The *Hitopadeśa* is a similar collection of fables, later than the *Panchatantra*, on which it is based. The date of the *Hitopadeśa* is uncertain.<sup>3</sup> There are also other collections of fables like them, as for instance, the *Kathā-sarit-sāgara*. The *Mahābhārata* contains a great deal of didactic material embedded in the story, and this may also have been used in the instruction of young nobles. For stories of heroes they had epic poems like the *Mahābhārata* and the *Rāmāyaṇa*, and at a later date there were in Rājasthān many bards who wrote in verse chronicles of

<sup>1</sup> *J.R.A.S.*, 1910, pp. 966ff. <sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, 1910, 966ff. Dr. Hertel thinks between 300 B.C. and A.D. 570, and nearer the earlier limit. Dr. F.W. Thomas says at least as old as A.D. 300. <sup>3</sup> Before A.D. 1400.

the deeds of heroes. These bardic chronicles began about A.D. 700, and were composed in the vernacular.

This education was kept by the Brāhmans closely in their hands, and the various *Sūtras* and *Śāstras*, which have come down to us, written of course by Brāhmans, again and again insist on the duty of the Kshatriyas to protect and give honour to the Brāhmans. It was forbidden to a Kshatriya to teach,<sup>1</sup> and though the injunction in Manu that the king should learn<sup>2</sup> 'from the people the theory of the various trades and professions' seems to imply that in the subject of *Vārta* others besides Brāhmans might be called in to give instruction to the young princes, (and this would seem probable also in the matter of military skill), yet Brāhma control dominated throughout. The king was, in fact, practically enjoined to regard himself as a pupil even after he has assumed his position as a ruler. Thus in Kauṭilya's *Arthaśāstra*<sup>3</sup> we are told: 'Him whose family and character are highly spoken of, who is well educated in the *Vedas* and the six *Angas*, is skilful in reading portents providential or accidental, is well versed in the science of government, and who is obedient, and who can prevent calamities providential or human by performing such expiatory rites as are prescribed in the *Atharvaveda*, the king shall employ as high priest. As a student his teacher, a son his father, and a servant his master, the king shall follow him. That Kshatriya breed which is brought up by Brāhmans, is charmed with the counsels of good councillors, and which faithfully follows the precepts of the *Śāstras*, becomes invincible, and attains success though unaided with weapons.'

The important position and authority thus claimed for the preceptor of the prince was no doubt influenced and intensified by the tendency in the Brāhmanic schools,

<sup>1</sup> Manu, x, 77. <sup>2</sup> Ibid., vii, 43. <sup>3</sup> *Arthaśāstra*, ix, 17.

which we have noticed in a previous chapter,<sup>1</sup> to exalt the teacher to such a position that he was regarded as an object of worship. It is quite possible that some rulers may have shaken themselves free from such a position, but the institution of the *purohita*, to whom was entrusted the religious, moral and intellectual education of the young princes and nobles, continued down to very recent times. Tod, in his accounts of *Rājasthān*,<sup>2</sup> in referring to these *purohitas*, gives rather a bad opinion of them as men who took advantage of their position to get gain for themselves by working on the superstition of their employers. There were, no doubt, some who made use of their office to get wealth and honours from the king or noblemen who employed them. But we need not suppose that this was generally the case, and probably many of them were men of high character, whose moral influence on their pupils was distinctly good. India has had many famous rulers who were educated under this system, and many who attained also to literary merit. Among the latter we must mention King Harsha (A.D. 606 to 648), to whom several plays and verse compositions have been ascribed.<sup>3</sup> As, however, in the case of the Brāhmanic education, the system of training of the young Kshatriyas tended to become stereotyped, and to look too much to the authority of the past for its ideals and practice, and thus it failed to preserve its vitality as an educational force.

Among the noble warriors of India there grew up a spirit of chivalry, very much like that which prevailed in Europe in the Middle Ages. William Ward,<sup>4</sup> referring to a work in Sanskrit on the military arts called *Dhanur Veda*, says, ‘It was contrary to the laws of war to smitē a warrior overcome

<sup>1</sup> pp. 22-3. <sup>2</sup> Tod’s *Rājasthān*, p. 407. <sup>3</sup> V. A. Smith, *Early History of India* (2nd ed.), p. 316; Macdonell’s *Sanskrit Literature*, pp. 36ff.

<sup>4</sup> Ward, ii, 461.

by another, or one who had turned his back, or who was running away; or one fearful, or he who had asked for quarter, or who had declined further fighting, or one unarmed; or a single charioteer who had alone survived in the engagement; or one deranged; or females, children or old men.' There were certain rules also with regard to combats. In fighting, for instance, with the club, it was unlawful to strike below the navel. Wrestling seems to have been popular in India, and still is at the present day. Many wrestling schools exist which have strict rules as to what is considered allowable. Tod<sup>1</sup> mentions that amongst the Rājput tribes, which were organized on a kind of feudal basis, youthful candidates were initiated to military fame in much the same way as the young men in Europe in the Middle Ages became knights. The ceremony of initiation was called *kharg bandāī*, or binding of the sword, and took place when the young Rājput was considered fit to bear arms. At the ceremony the young warrior was presented with a lance, and his sword was buckled to his side. The spirit of chivalry thus inculcated must have set before these young nobles a high ideal of valour and virtue, and this is reflected in the epic stories and in the bardic chronicles of *Rājasthān* which contain many stories of noble deeds and knightly heroism. The typical warrior hero of India is found in Rāma, whose story is told not only in the Sanskrit *Rāmāyana* of Vālmiki, but in many vernacular imitations, of which the most famous is the Hindi *Rāmāyana* of Tulsi Dās (or *Rām-charit-mānas*) which was written about A.D. 1600. Indian authors never tire of telling the story of this hero again and again, and his character certainly sets forth a high ideal of life and virtue.

We may say that the education of the young Indian nobles was not inferior to that of the European knights in

<sup>1</sup> Tod, 63, 512.

the time of chivalry, and was very much like it in many respects. The note of personal ambition and of adventure for adventure's sake seems much less prominent in the Indian ideal than in the European, and perhaps hardly existed, and the gentler virtues such as patience and filial devotion were much more emphasized, as we see in the story of Rāma. The idea that the king and nobles had a duty to perform to society in the protection of the weak, and that their position was not one so much of glory and of ease as of service to others, is very prominent. No doubt many of them failed to live up to the noble ideal, but in formulating it and holding it before the rising generation of the young Kshatriyas, India has much of which to be proud.

*Agricultural and Trading Classes.*—As in the case of the Kshatriyas, the control of the education of the Vaiśyas, or trading and agricultural class amongst the Aryans, early came under Brāhmaṇ control. Thus we find in the earliest extant *Sūtras*<sup>1</sup> that the Vaiśyas, as well as the Brāhmaṇs and Kshatriyas, were expected to receive initiation as a preliminary to entering upon the study of the *Veda*; and in Manu it is said,<sup>2</sup> 'Let the three twice-born castes, discharging their prescribed duties, study the *Veda*'. We have seen how in the case of the Kshatriyas the study of the *Veda* was attenuated, or perhaps we may say that it was developed by specialization in certain directions to meet the special needs of the young nobles and warriors. With regard to the Vaiśyas,<sup>3</sup> trade, rearing cattle and agriculture were regarded as their special pursuits, and in fitting themselves for these they would have less benefit from the Vedic schools than the Kshatriyas for their future vocation. It seems likely that the study of the *Veda* became even more attenuated for them than for the Kshatriyas,

<sup>1</sup> Gautama, i.   <sup>2</sup> Manu, x, 1.   <sup>3</sup> Ibid., x, 79.

and that at a quite early date the majority of them ceased to avail themselves of their privilege of attending the Brāhmaṇic schools, except perhaps for a very short period. In the Law of Manu<sup>1</sup> the functions of a Vaiśya are thus described: 'A Vaiśya must never conceive this wish, "I will not keep cattle," and if a Vaiśya is willing to keep them, they must never be kept by men of other castes. A Vaiśya must know the respective value of gems, of pearls, of corals, of metals, of cloth made of thread, of perfumes and of condiments. He must be acquainted with the manner of sowing seeds, and of the good and bad qualities of fields, and he must perfectly know all measures and weights; moreover, the excellence and defects of commodities, the advantages and disadvantages of different countries, the probable profit and loss on merchandise, and the proper means of rearing cattle. He must be acquainted with the proper wages of servants, with various languages of men, with the manner of keeping goods, and the rules of purchase and sale.' The duties thus outlined would require that a young Vaiśya, besides a knowledge of agriculture, should also know the rudiments of commercial geography, arithmetic, and some languages, as well as the practical details of trade. With regard to these subjects it is probable that at first they were learnt by the boy from his father in the course of business and probably amounted in most cases to little more than the minimum which would be necessary for carrying on with success the particular trade in which he was engaged. Thus a knowledge of the various languages of men need not have meant more than a slight acquaintance with the speech of foreigners with whom trade brought him into touch, picked up in his intercourse with them, and a knowledge of the advantages and disadvantages of different countries would

be gathered in the same way. The education of the young Vaiśya, apart from his study of the *Veda*, was probably therefore at the earliest period, domestic; that is to say, he learned his trade from his father in the actual course of business.

In ancient Indian literature there are many references to trade guilds, and it seems not unlikely that they may have made arrangements for those who were apprentices to have training under a teacher in some subjects. Till recent times there existed in India what were called *mahājani* schools. They were to be found in many market towns where the *mahājans*, or traders, combined to pay a teacher. They taught the special kind of writing used by the *mahājans* and arithmetic, and gave sufficient education to enable a boy to help his father in his trade. These schools are amongst the indigenous primary schools referred to in a later chapter. They probably existed from old times but it is not known when they began.

*Medical Studies.*—Medicine was studied at the University of Takshaśilā.<sup>1</sup> A Greek writer, Strabo, praises the efficiency of the Indian practitioners. Though not very much is known about the course in those days, it seems to have been a long one. The *Mahāvagga* mentions a student named Jivaka who after studying medicine for seven years wanted to return home. His teacher gave him permission only with great reluctance and made it clear to him that after such a short period of study he could not regard himself as a master of the subject. Yet on his way home Jivaka undertook two operations. The course included practical training both in surgery and pharmacy, and special attention was given to antidotes for snake-bite. There seems<sup>2</sup> to have been a considerable development of the study of medicine in the period 250 B.C. to A.D. 800.

<sup>1</sup> Altekar, pp. 171ff.    <sup>2</sup> Ibid., pp. 176-81.

The textbooks were in Sanskrit, and so that language had first to be mastered. There were many branches of the subject and students were encouraged to specialize in one or more branches. Practical training was emphasized and not the mere memorizing of textbooks. Surgical methods were thoroughly taught and for the acquisition of a knowledge of anatomy corpses were dissected. Many important operations were performed, but as the use of anaesthetics had not in those days been discovered, there was a limit to the possibilities of development.

India was famous for its medical skill down to about the eighth century A.D. The Khalifa of Baghdad, Harun, sent men to study medicine in India and induced Indian doctors to come to his capital. Sanskrit medical works were translated into Arabic.

At a later period a serious deterioration set in. The course became shorter and the study of surgery seems to have dropped out. In ancient times Takshaśilā was the chief centre for the study of medicine. At a later period we know that medicine was studied at the Buddhist University of Nālanda, but nothing is known about the course there. Other centres are not known, but medicine would presumably be studied at hospitals which certainly existed in those days.

Many of the Mohammedan centres of learning also included medicine in their course of studies.

*Veterinary Science*.—In old times kings in India had large bodies of cavalry in their army and also many elephants. The care of these animals would necessitate some persons giving attention to veterinary science.<sup>1</sup> We learn from one of his rock edicts that Aśoka provided some form of medical help for the dumb creatures. Special works were written on the diseases of horses and elephants

<sup>1</sup> Altekar, pp. 181, 282.

and their cure. In the *Mahābhārata* there is mention of Nakula and Sahdeva as possessing skill in doctoring animals and Kauṭilya recommends the employment by kings of practised elephant and horse doctors for their armies. Though we have no record of the existence of special colleges where veterinary science was studied, it seems obvious that there must have been some arrangements for the training of veterinary doctors, possibly by apprenticeship with those who were already skilled practitioners.

*Craftsmen*.—As time went on, the original four castes of early times became very greatly divided and subdivided. The Brāhmaṇa and Kshatriya castes still held their position, but the Vaiśyas became mingled with the masses of the surrounding population. In course of ages the number of castes increased and in particular all those engaged in different occupations became separated from others as castes. There came to be, for example, castes of carpenters, tailors, goldsmiths, and large numbers of others. In modern times a man does not always follow the profession or trade of his particular caste, but in ancient times probably all, or almost all, did so. The technical and professional skill developed in each caste was passed on from generation to generation.

India is a land of villages, and even at the present day with a growing commercial activity it is said that almost nine-tenths of the population live in villages. Each village is usually an agricultural community<sup>1</sup> more or less self-contained. But craftsmen are needed by the husbandman, so besides the farmers and agricultural labourers there dwell in each village certain artisans and others. Besides the Brāhmaṇa priest and *jyotiṣhi*, or astrologer, there may be carpenter, blacksmith, potter, and washerman

<sup>1</sup> See A. K. Coomaraswamy, *The Indian Craftsman*, ch. i.

Others who are present may be the barber (who also performs some surgical operations), the scavenger, the tailor, the leather-worker, the goldsmith, and so on. These craftsmen have certain privileges, and are entitled to certain payments in grain from the farmer for their services. The position of these persons and the manner of their payment vary in different parts of India, but the same features are everywhere found.

Some of the occupations are very ancient. In the *Rigveda-Samhita*<sup>1</sup> the following are mentioned: carpenter, physician, priest, blacksmith, poet, female grinder of corn. The construction of chariots is often alluded to, and the Ribhus are mentioned as celebrated workers in wood and metal. Weaving, boat-building, leather-working, agriculture and irrigation are also referred to.

It was the villages which were the strongholds of the traditional arts and crafts of India, but many of the craftsmen also lived in towns.<sup>2</sup> Here those employed in the same occupation were drawn together in the craft guilds. Sometimes the craftsmen of a particular trade all belong to one caste, in which the bonds which unite them are very strong indeed, and no outsider would be admitted. But where the same craft is pursued by men of different castes the guild may bring them together; and though membership is hereditary, newcomers can be admitted by paying a fee, but no unqualified person is allowed to remain in the guild, or to become a member of it. There are no indentures of apprenticeship, but a boy born in one of the castes learns the particular craft from his father, and eventually takes the place of his father as a member of the guild. The guild raises funds, chiefly by fines, which

<sup>1</sup> Muir, *Original Sanskrit Texts*, v, 464; *Rigveda*, ix, 112; i, 110, 3; i, 111, 1. <sup>2</sup> See Sir Geo. Birdwood, *The Industrial Arts of India*, pp. 131ff; Coomaraswamy, ch. ii.

are spent mostly in charities. The hours of work are regulated, and also the amount to be done, and in old times the guild also controlled the standard of quality both of material and design. The guild is also a kind of mutual assurance society. Each guild is managed by its *mahājans* (i.e. 'great men') or *seths*. In large cities the guilds command great influence.

The origin and age of these craft guilds is uncertain, but in the *Rāmāyaṇa* in the account of Bharata going out in procession to seek Rāma, the craftsmen are mentioned<sup>1</sup> as accompanying him as well as the 'foremost merchants': 'And all other, and the foremost merchants as well as all the principal classes, joyfully went in quest of Rāma, and a number of gem-cutters, and goodly potters, weavers, and armourers, and peacock-dancers, sawers, and perforators of gems, glass-makers, and workers in ivory, cooks, incense-sellers, well-known goldsmiths, and wool manufacturers, bathers in tepid water, shampooers, physicians, makers of *dhūpas*, and wine-sellers, washermen, and tailors and actors.'

This may imply the existence of some organization of the craftsmen into guilds before the time of Vālmīki and guilds of artisans are also referred to in Kauṭilya's *Arthaśāstra*.<sup>2</sup>

In modern times their influence has weakened from various causes, but they still exist, and the account of the guilds of Āhmadābād, as given in the *Imperial Gazetteer of India*,<sup>3</sup> is a good illustration of the system: 'In consequence of the importance of its manufactures in silk and cotton, the system of caste or trade unions is more fully developed Āhmadābād than in any other part of Gujarāt. Each of the different castes of traders, manufacturers, and artisans forms its own trade guild,

<sup>1</sup> *Rāmāyaṇa* of Vālmīki, Griffith's translation, p.417; see also Liddwood, p. 131. <sup>2</sup> *Arthaśāstra*, iv. 1. <sup>3</sup> I.G.I., vol. V, p. 101.

to which all heads of households belong. Every member has a right to vote, and decisions are passed by a majority. In cases where one industry has many distinct branches there are several guilds. Thus among potters, the makers of bricks, of tiles, and of earthen jars are for trade purposes distinct; and in the great weaving trade, those who prepare the different articles of silk and cotton form distinct associations. The object of the guild is to regulate competition among the members, e.g. by prescribing days or hours during which work shall not be done. The decisions of the guilds are enforced by fines. If the offender refuses to pay, and the members of the guild all belong to one caste, the offender is put out of the caste. If the guild contains men of different castes, the guild uses its influence with other guilds to prevent the recusant member from getting work. Besides the amount received from fines, the different guilds draw an income by levying fees on any person beginning to practise his craft. This custom prevails in the cloth and other industries, but no fee is paid by the potters, carpenters, and other inferior artisans. An exception is also made in the case of a son succeeding his father, when nothing has to be paid. In other cases the amount varies in proportion to the importance of the trade from Rs. 50 to 500. The revenue derived from these fees and from fines is expended in feasts to the members of the guild, and in charity. Charitable institutions or *sadāvart*, where beggars are fed daily, are maintained in Ahmadābād at the expense of the trade guilds.<sup>1</sup>

In ancient times the arts and crafts were encouraged by kings and great nobles, and many of them kept their own craftsmen who were organized on a semi-feudal<sup>1</sup> basis. Sometimes they were in the service of a temple or monastery. The position of such craftsmen was hereditary and

<sup>1</sup> Coomaraswamy, ch. iii; Birdwood, p. 141.

secure. Royal craftsmen are said to have been established even as early as King Aśoka. Many of the Muslim rulers were great patrons of the craftsmen.<sup>1</sup> Firūz Shāh maintained a regular department of industries under his personal supervision and took a keen interest in the technical training of his slaves. Akbar organized anew a public works department and himself occasionally inspected workshops. Sir Thomas Roe, an Englishman who was in India from 1615 to 1619, is a witness that under Jahāngir and Shāh Jahān arts and crafts were thriving.

But the patronage of the rich was not always an unmixed blessing. Thus in mentioning the royal encouragement of the arts Bernier<sup>2</sup> complains that forced service was sometimes resorted to by rich patrons and also intimidation, and the Abbé Dubois<sup>3</sup> also, in praising Indian craftsmen, attributes their not having reached a higher standard of perfection to the cupidity of the rulers. If an artisan, he says, excelled in his craft he was carried off to the palace and confined there for the rest of his life, without remission of toil and little reward. Dubois believed that arts and manufactures would have made greater progress in India if the rulers had given them real encouragement.

But however this may be, one may certainly say that the spirit of fine art and of craftsmanship has existed in India for long centuries, and has still a future before it. In ancient times the caste system helped to keep up the standard of work, and the dexterity and skill of each particular trade was handed down from father to son.<sup>4</sup> Each craftsman and each caste was considered as in duty bound to perform his or its particular work for the good of society.

The system of education for the lads of each particular

<sup>1</sup> Jaffar, pp. 206ff. <sup>2</sup> *Bernier's Travels*, pp. 228-58. <sup>3</sup> Dubois, i, 35.

<sup>4</sup> Birdwood, p. 129; Coomaraswamy, ch. v.

trade, then, was a domestic one.<sup>1</sup> They had practically no choice in the matter, but were, as a matter of course, brought up to the same trade as their fathers. Where the father was living and in good health he would usually train up his own son, and the young craftsman was from the beginning trained in the actual workshop. Thus not only was there a most affectionate relation between teacher and pupil, but the training was free from the artificiality of the schoolroom. The boy was taught by observing and handling real things, and the father would take a great delight in passing on to his son the skill which he himself possessed. In the collection of jade at the Indian museum is a large engraved bowl on which a family in the employ of the Emperors of Delhi was engaged for three generations.<sup>2</sup>

It was not merely a question of actual teaching, but the boy would day by day absorb unconsciously the traditions and spirit of the particular craft which he was learning.

In many arts and crafts drawing would be a necessary accomplishment. This was learnt<sup>3</sup> by the boy drawing first certain peculiar curves on a panel. After this came the drawing of certain traditional ornaments, conventional figures of mythical animals and other forms. Drawing was not taught from nature.

In the majority of occupations a knowledge of reading and writing would not be required for the direct purposes of the craft, and would not be learnt. But certain Sanskrit works would in some occupations be learnt by heart.<sup>4</sup> These contained the traditional rules relating to the special craft; and would not only be learnt but also explained to the novice. The craftsman was thus taught to look to

<sup>1</sup> Coomaraswamy, ch. vi. also *Medieval Sinhalese Art*, by same author, p. 63. <sup>2</sup> Birdwood, p. 142. <sup>3</sup> Coomaraswamy, *Medieval Sinhalese Art*, p. 64. <sup>4</sup> Coomaraswamy, ch. vi.

the past ages for the rules of his trade and even to regard it as having been revealed by the divine skill of Viśvakarman. Thus in south India there are persons generally of the goldsmith caste, who are called *Vastu sāstrīs*, who know by heart the traditional rules regulating the building of houses, who must be consulted by those who wish to erect new houses as to all the necessary details prescribed by the ancient books.<sup>1</sup>

Though persons other than the three 'twice-born' castes were excluded from the study of the *Vedas* they were not shut out from participation in all religious rites, and in common with others would in various ways come to know something of the mythology and doctrines of the Hindu religion. Muslim craftsmen would, of course, have the same opportunity as others to send their boys to the *maktab*, held at the mosque, and here something of the Muslim religion was taught. The work of the craftsman was also accompanied by many religious rites, and it is not unknown for Hindu workmen on certain occasions even to worship their tools.

Thus the education of the young craftsman in India was entirely vocational, and perhaps often narrowly so. Though the religious side of the boy's education was not neglected, on the literary side it was defective, and except for many treatise he might have to commit to memory in connexion with his craft, he would have nothing but such scraps of folklore, mythology, and epic and other stories as might be handed down in the family, or related as the villagers gathered for gossip and discussion in the evenings, or taught by some wandering mendicant or temple priest. Yet as a vocational education it was not lacking in elements that made it really valuable. The affectionate family relationship between teacher and pupil,

<sup>1</sup> Padfield, *Hindu at Home*, p. 3.

the absence of artificiality in the instruction, and the opportunity and encouragement to produce really good work which the protection of the guild or caste gave—these were not without their influence in helping to build up a spirit of good craftsmanship, which was responsible for the production of really fine work.

## CHAPTER V

## WOMEN'S EDUCATION

THERE are many evidences which show that women in ancient times in India had a much higher status and more independence than they came to have later. Thus we find in one hymn that it is said that an unmarried young learned daughter ought to be married to a learned bridegroom, and that a father should never think of giving in marriage a daughter of very young age.<sup>1</sup> A young daughter should only be married after the period of studentship (*brahma-chārya*).<sup>2</sup> Women too in early times seem to have had the right to utter the sacred *mantras*.<sup>3</sup> The position of the women of the Aryan invaders of India was in fact one of authority and honour, and marriage sometimes took place by free choice of man and maid. The customs of infant marriage and enforced widowhood were not prevalent among the Aryans of Vedic times.

The authorship of some of the Vedic hymns is ascribed to women among whom were Viśvanāra, Lopemudrā Apalā and Śāswatī. In ancient times there was a famous and most learned philosopher named Yājnavalkya. Once in the presence of King Janaka he held a discussion with learned Brāhmans. Among the interlocutors was a lady named Gārgi Vāchaknavi, who greatly distinguished herself in the discussion. Maitreyi, too, the wife of Yājnavalkya, who was said to be 'conversant with Brahman', is represented as holding with her husband an abstruse philosophical discussion on the relationship of the universal to the individual soul. There are many other references

<sup>1</sup>*Rigveda*, iii, 5, 65, 16. <sup>2</sup>*Yajurveda*, viii, 1. <sup>3</sup>S.K. Das quotes many passages in support of this, pp. 223ff.

also in the ancient literature which show that education was not denied to women and that many of them attained to great proficiency in learning.

In course of time, however, the situation changed and the right to study came to be denied to women. One cannot fix the time when this retrograde movement began, but even in the *Rigveda* we find signs that women were coming to be regarded as inferior beings and unequal to men in intellect. Thus it is said,<sup>1</sup> 'Indra himself hath said, The mind of woman brooks not discipline, her intellect hath little weight.' By the time the code of Manu was drawn up her dependent position was fully established. It is there written:<sup>2</sup> 'By a girl, by a young woman, or even by an aged one, nothing must be done independently, even in her own house. In childhood a female must be subject to her father, in youth to her husband, when her lord is dead to her sons; a woman must never be independent. She must not seek to separate herself from her father, husband, or sons; by leaving them she would make both her own and her husband's family contemptible.' And again:<sup>3</sup> 'Day and night must women be kept in dependence by the males of their families. Her father protects her in childhood, her husband protects her in youth, and her sons protect her in old age; a woman is never fit for independence.'

There are other passages too which show the low esteem in which women had come to be held when these regulations came into being. They were not allowed to study the *Vedas*. Early marriage had become by now the custom, and usually the only education a girl received was one which fitted her to fulfil her duties in the household of her husband. 'Let the husband employ his wife in the

<sup>1</sup> *Rigveda*, viii, 34, 17. <sup>2</sup> *Ibid*, ix, 2, 3, <sup>3</sup> *Manu*, v. 147-9.

collection and expenditure of wealth, in keeping everything clean, in the fulfilment of religious duties, in the preparation, of his food, and in looking after the household utensils.<sup>1</sup> The training for this began in her own home under the supervision of her mother, and when she was married and went to live with her husband it would be continued, by the Indian custom of the non-separation of family, under her mother-in-law. The injunction that she should be employed in the collection and expenditure of her husband's wealth would seem to imply some knowledge of simple accounts, but this does not necessarily mean a knowledge of written arithmetic. It is often the custom for women in India today who can neither read nor write to look after their husband's money. Although shut out from the study of the *Vedas* and from performing a sacrifice, vow, or fast, apart from her husband, the performance of certain religious duties was specially enjoined on her. In addition to receiving instruction in the rites and ceremonies in which she was expected to take part a woman would become acquainted with something of the vast heap of mythological stories and folk-lore which have been handed down and accumulated in India from ancient times. Though few might be literate many would thus imbibe a good deal of the ancient culture. Nowhere in the ancient world was such an importance attached to literacy as there is nowadays. But for the most part the education, such as it was, of girls was entirely domestic and vocational in the sense that they were being prepared for that which was considered a woman's principal work, the duties of the household.

A foreign visitor, the Greek Megasthenes, who came to India in the fourth century before Christ, relates that the

<sup>1</sup> *Manu*, ix, 11.

Brāhmans did not as a rule teach philosophy to their womenfolk, but he indicates that there were some exceptions.

Though women in India were probably for centuries for the most part excluded from literary education there were indeed always some exceptions to the general rule. Indian literature of all ages contains many references to educated women. Some Indian women have taken a prominent and vigorous part in state affairs, such as Chānd Bibī of Āhmad-nagar in the sixteenth century. Tārabāī among the Marāthas in the seventeenth, and Ahalya Bāī of Indore in the eighteenth. There have also been poetesses like Mīrā Bāī of the fifteenth century, and Bibī Ratan Kuar of the eighteenth century, both of whom wrote poems in the Hindi language.

The daughters of princes and wealthy landowners often received some education from their fathers or family priests. There were indeed always some women who broke through the barriers which shut them out from learning. Ward,<sup>1</sup> for example, mentions one Hati Vidyālankāra, Kulīn Brāhmaṇ widow, who removed from Bengal to Benares and obtained many pupils there. Many female ascetics and mendicants also are said to learn some Sanskrit and a still greater number to be conversant with popular religious poems in the different vernaculars.

The dancing girls who are often attached to temples and called *devadāsīs* (servants of the god) have too often fallen into immorality, but they have always been famous in India for their wit and cleverness. They have from ancient times received some education to enable them to perform their work of reciting and singing poems at certain festivals.

<sup>1</sup> Ward, ii, 503.

Dubois says,<sup>1</sup> 'These prostitutes are the only females in India who may learn to read, sing, and dance. Such accomplishments belong to them exclusively and are, for that reason, held by the rest of the sex in such abhorrence, that every virtuous woman would consider the mention of them as an affront.' The education of prostitutes is a very ancient custom in India. Thus with regard to them the *Arthaśāstra* of Kauṭilya says:<sup>2</sup> 'Those who teach prostitutes, female slaves and actresses, arts such as singing, playing on musical instruments like *vīṇā*, pipe and drum, reading the thoughts of others, manufacture of scents and garlands, shampooing, and the art of attracting and captivating the mind of others, shall be endowed with maintenance from the state.' Their sons also were to be trained as actors, and many of the prostitutes were to be trained for the work of spies. 'The wives of actors and others of similar professions who have been taught various languages and the use of signals shall, along with their relatives, be made use of in detecting the wicked and murdering or deluding foreign spies.'

In considering what effect Buddhism had on the education of women it must be remembered that the Buddhist monastic order included not only monks but nuns (*bhikkhunis*). But it was only with the greatest reluctance that the Buddha consented to this arrangement. In this he no doubt reflected the opinions of his time which were already becoming unfavourable to the independence and education of women. His aunt, Mahāprajāpati, wished to join the order, but he refused three times. She appealed to Ānanda, who interceded for her, and at last the Buddha yielded. He expressed, however, his sorrow, and said that the admission of women would ruin his work. If they had not

<sup>1</sup> Dubois, p. 387. <sup>2</sup> *Arthaśāstra*, p. 156.

been admitted, the doctrine, he said, would have abided a thousand years, but now it would only abide five hundred. The nuns were made closely dependent on the monks, and could only be admitted by them; and there are passages which show that the Buddha shared the low opinion of women which was held by others in India, as we have seen expressed, for instance, in the Law of Manu. We have no means of ascertaining to what extent Buddhist nunneries spread, and what proportion in numbers they bore to the monasteries. It would seem most likely that they would be much fewer in number, and this is borne out by what is found in Buddhist countries today. In Ceylon Buddhist nuns are very few, and in Burma they are small in numbers compared with the monks. Those nuns who joined the order received instruction in the Buddhist doctrines and perhaps also in reading and writing. No doubt some attained to higher proficiency in learning. At all events there are numerous references in Buddhist literature to the intellectual attainments of many Buddhist nuns. Some of those belonging to the order became famous as teachers and scholars.

In spite of this, however, there is no evidence that Buddhist nunneries helped to any great extent to spread education amongst women. There is nothing to show that the nunneries, like the monasteries, became centres of general instruction, receiving girl pupils even from amongst those who were not intending to join the order. It seems hardly safe to conjecture that even when Buddhism was at its zenith in India it did very much for the education of women.

Amongst Muslims the education of women<sup>1</sup> was just as restricted as amongst Hindus. The purdah system, which

<sup>1</sup> Law, p. 194.

shut up all Muslim women, except young girls, in seclusion, made their education a matter of great difficulty even where it may have been desired, which does not seem to have been often the case. We have evidence<sup>1</sup> that sometimes young girls were taught in schools as well as boys, but their leaving school at an early age must have prevented their education being carried very far. It seems that sometimes in the harems of kings or nobles some attempt was made to give education to the ladies who lived within, and some of them attained to great distinction. Ghiyās-ud-din, who was ruler of Mālwā from 1469 to 1500, is said<sup>2</sup> to have appointed schoolmistresses for the ladies of his harem; and Akbar also made a similar arrangement for his household, and certain rooms were set apart at Fathpur Sikri for this purpose.

Many Muslim ladies of former times were celebrated for their learning.<sup>3</sup> Razīya, who sat on the throne of Delhi after her father. Altamsh, was an educated princess and patronized men of learning. Chānd Sultāna, a favourite heroine of the Deccan, had many talents. She had received an excellent education and could speak Arabic, Persian, Turkish, Kanarese, and Marāthi. She was also skilled in painting and music. The daughter of Bābar, Gul-Badan Begam, is said to have written the Humāyūn Nāmah, or memoirs of her brother, Humāyūn. It is also said that she had her own library and used to collect books. The niece of Humāyūn, Salima Sultāna, who became one of Akbar's wives, was well versed in Persian and wrote poems in that language. The nurse of Akbar, Māhām Anaga, was both learned and a promoter of education. She was the founder of a college. Nūr Jahān, the wife of Jahāngīr, who helped

<sup>1</sup> See Jaffar Sharif, *Qānūn-i-Islām*, p. 32; Jaffar, pp. 190ff. <sup>2</sup> Ferishta, iv, 237; Jaffar, p. 189. <sup>3</sup> Jaffar, pp. 192-7.

her husband to rule his empire, was highly cultured and acquainted with both Arabic and Persian literature. Her niece, Mumtāz Mahal, who was the favourite wife of Shāh Jahān, and in memory of whom he erected the Tāj Mahal at Agra, was an adept in Persian and wrote poems. Jahānārā Begam and Zebinda Begam, daughters of Shāh Jahān were both well educated. The tutoress of Jahānārā Begam was Satiunnisā, who knew Persian and also the Korān, and was a poetess. The daughters of Aurangzib were educated ladies, especially the eldest, Zibunnisā Begam, who was acquainted with both Persian and Arabic. She had her own library and encouraged scholars. It is probable that many other royal noble ladies, whose names have not been recorded, also received some education behind the purdah, but even so they were few compared with the great mass of Muslim women who received no education at all, except a domestic training in the performance of the duties of the household.

Although with the important exceptions mentioned above Indian women for long centuries were excluded from any education except training in domestic and religious duties, they have generally had before them a high ideal of virtue and devotion, and when opportunities have been given them have shown themselves capable of great intellectual attainments. The very custom of *sati*, or self-immolation of the widow on her husband's funeral pyre, horrible as it now seems even to Indian people themselves, was at least a sign of the great self-sacrifice and wisely devotion of which Indian women were capable.

As Rāma has become the national hero of India so his wife Sītā is regarded as an ideal for women to follow, and the ideal is by no means an unworthy one. When Rāma was banished to wander in the forest through the evil instigation of Kaikeyī, his step mother, Sītā decided to accompany

her husband and share all his hardships and difficulties. Thus she speaks:<sup>1</sup>

If the righteous son of Raghu wends to forests dark  
and drear,  
Sitā steps before her husband wild and thorny paths  
to clear.  
Like the tasted refuse water cast thy timid thoughts  
aside,  
Take me to the pathless jungle, bid me by my lord  
abide.  
Car and steed and gilded palace, vain are these to  
woman's life,  
Dearer is her husband's shadow to the loved and  
loving wife!  
For my mother often taught me and my father often  
spake  
That her home the wedded woman doth beside her  
husband make,  
As the shadow to the substance, to her lord is faithful  
wife,  
And she parts not from her consort till she parts with  
fleeting life.

\* \* \* \*

Years will pass in happy union—happiest lot to  
woman given—  
Sitā seeks not throne or empire, nor the brighter  
joys of heaven.  
Heaven conceals not brighter mansions in its sunny  
fields of pride,  
Where without her lord and husband faithful Sitā  
would reside!  
Therefore let me seek the jungle where the jungle  
rangers rove,

<sup>1</sup> *Rāmāyaṇa*, R. C. Dutt's translation, pp. 41, 42.

Dearer than the royal palace, where I share my  
husband's love,  
And my heart in sweet communion shall my Rāma's  
wishes share,  
And my wifely toil shall lighten Rāma's load of woe  
and care!"

And all through the long years of wandering and hard-  
ship and adventure she remained loyal and steadfast in  
spite of many sufferings endured.

In the *Mahābhārata* also there is a description of a true  
wife which we may set side by side with Sītā's lofty ideal.

'A wife is half the man, his truest friend;  
A loving wife is a perpetual spring  
Of virtue, pleasure, wealth; a faithful wife,  
Is his best aid in seeking heavenly bliss;  
A sweetly-speaking wife is a companion  
In solitude, a father in advice,  
A rest in passing through life's wilderness.'<sup>1</sup>

If it was, then, almost entirely an ideal of domestic virtue  
and capability that was set before the Indian girl through  
long centuries of India's history, and though the ideal was  
in some ways narrow and circumscribed, yet it was from  
another point of view a great and noble one. And the high  
degree in which Indian women in the past have realized the  
ideal which their somewhat narrow education held before  
them, is a promise that when their educational horizon  
shall have become enlarged, as it is being continually  
enlarged nowadays, they will achieve still greater excellence  
in wider and yet more noble ideals.

<sup>1</sup> Monier-Williams, *Brāhmaṇism and Hinduism*, p. 389.

## CHAPTER VI

### BUDDHIST EDUCATION

AT the time when Gautama the Buddha lived and taught his doctrines, those philosophical ideas which were afterwards organized into the *Vedānta*, *Yoga*, and other systems recognized as permissible to those within the fold of Brāhmanism were already being discussed, though they had not assumed the final form as enshrined in the recognized *Sūtras*. The doctrine of *karma* and transmigration was generally accepted by thinking persons, and the question which earnest inquirers after truth sought to answer was how release could be obtained from the endless round of births and rebirths. Buddhism was one among many answers to the question, and it has its roots deep in Hindu philosophic thought. It differed from the recognized Brāhmanic philosophy, however, in several important details, and the teaching of Buddha was characterized by great earnestness and by a broad spirit of philanthropy. It might easily, however, have been assimilated as a part of the Brāhmanic system, as many other beliefs and practices were, but for the fact that it contained certain elements which were destined to bring it into hostility with that system. These included the non-recognition of the *Vedas*, and of the Brāhmanic hierarchy, as well as of the religious aspect of the caste system. Buddha carried on no crusade against any of these, but the opposition was implicit in his system, and in course of time the hostility worked itself out into a struggle for existence which ended in Buddhism ceasing to exist in India as a separate faith, though several of its ideas were incorporated into Hinduism. For over fifteen hundred years, however, it was in vogue, and developed a system of education which was a

rival of the Brāhmanic system, though in many ways similar to it.

One main difference between the Brāhmanic and Buddhist education was that the latter was not based on Vedic study and its teachers were not Brāhmans, unless those who had become converted to Buddhism. It was open to all comers, and not merely to the three 'twice-born' castes. All castes were equally admissible to the Buddhist community, though it seems to have been specially welcomed by the wealthy and respectable and supported by rich merchants and powerful rulers, to whose influence it owed a great deal of its advancement.

Lay adherents were recognized and duties laid down for their guidance, but it was a logical conclusion from Buddha's views of life that for rapid progress in spiritual improvement a life of retirement from the world was necessary, and this was urged upon those who wished to be earnest in their pursuit of freedom from earthly desires. A life of meditation in the solitude of a forest was considered to be the best of all, but from the first this was adopted only by the most earnest, and the majority of the monks, or *bhikkhus*, lived in companies in monasteries, or *vihāras*. These *vihāras* formed a characteristic feature of Buddhism, and for many centuries they were widely spread in India.

In order to be admitted to the *sangha*, or community of *bhikkhus*, the conditions were very simple. The applicant must be free from certain diseases, and be neither a slave, a debtor, nor in the king's service. If under age he must first obtain the consent of his parents. The ceremony of admission is thus described in the *Vinaya Pitaka*:<sup>1</sup>

'Let him who desires to receive ordination first cut off his hair and beard; let him put on yellow robes, adjust his

<sup>1</sup> *Mahāvagga*, i, 38.

upper robe so as to cover one shoulder, salute the feet of the *bhikkhus* with his head; and sit down squatting; then let him raise his joined hands, and tell him to say: "I take my refuge in the Buddha, I take my refuge in the Dhamma, I take my refuge in the Sangha."'

This first act of admission was called the *pabbajja*; and after admission the candidate became a novice. The ceremony for full admission was called the *upasampada* and was very similar. No one could receive the *pabbajja* ordination till he was eight years of age, nor the *upasampada* ordination till he was twenty. There were strict rules as to chastity, poverty, and abstinence from worldly pleasures, and also as to food and clothes. A few simple rules as to discipline were laid down, but the monk took no vow of obedience. Respect for superiors was required from the novice, and the chapter, consisting of at least ten monks, might impose penances for offences and even expel a *bhikkhu* from the order in case of serious offence. The usual mode of obtaining subsistence was for the monk to beg his food, taking with him his begging bowl and going from house to house. But from the first it was also permitted for wealthy laymen to invite monks to feed occasionally at their houses and even on certain occasions to take food to the monastery. The offences which were to be avoided by the members of the order are summed up in the *Pātimokkha*, a work which dates from the very early days of Buddhism. Twice every month this document should be publicly repeated in an assembly of monks at each monastery, and when this takes place a monk who has broken any rule is expected to confess his misdemeanour and a penance is imposed upon him according to the gravity of his offence. All the monks took part in the work of begging for food, but the manual labour in connexion with the *vihāra* was performed by the novices, and the senior

members of the community were expected to devote themselves to meditation and to trances, and to learning thoroughly the doctrines of the faith and spreading them abroad in the world. During part of the year the *bhikkhus* often travelled from place to place spreading their doctrines and teaching the adherents of the Buddhist faith, but during the rainy season they settled down at a monastery. The residents of a monastery must often therefore have changed, and in becoming *bhikkhus* it was membership in the order rather than in any particular monastery that was obtained.

Each *sāmanera*, or novice, was required to choose a *bhikkhu*, who was a full member of the order, as his preceptor, or *upajjhāya* (or *āchāriya*). A pupil was called a *saddhivihārika*.<sup>1</sup>

'I prescribe, O *bhikkhus*, that young *bhikkhus* choose an *upajjhāya* (or preceptor). The *upajjhāya*, O *bhikkhus*, ought to consider the *saddhivihārika* (i.e. pupil) as a son; the *saddhivihārika* ought to consider the *upajjhāya* as a father. Thus these two, united by mutual reverence, confidence and communion of life, will progress, advance, and reach a high stage in this doctrine and discipline.'

The choosing of an *upajjhāya* is to be as follows<sup>2</sup>: 'Let him who is going to choose an *upajjhāya* adjust his upper robe so as to cover one shoulder, salute the feet of his intended *upajjhāya*, sit down squatting, raise his joined hands, and say, "Venerable Sir, be my *upajjhāya*." ' This was to be repeated three times, and if the *bhikkhu* who was addressed expressed his consent by word or gesture, then the choice was complete and the relationship of preceptor and pupil began.

There were strict regulations<sup>3</sup> for the conduct of the pupil towards the preceptor.

<sup>1</sup> *Mahāvagga*, i, 25. <sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, i, 25. <sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, i, 25.

'Let him arise betimes; and having taken off his shoes and adjusted his upper robe so as to cover one shoulder let him give to the *upajjhāya* the teeth-cleanser, and water to rinse his mouth with. Then let him prepare a seat for the *upajjhāya*. If there is rice-milk, let him rinse the jug, and offer rice-milk to the *upajjhāya*. When he has drunk it, let him give water to the *upajjhāya*, take the jug, hold it down, rinse it properly without damaging it by rubbing, and put it away. When the *upajjhāya* has risen let him take away the seat. If the place is dirty let him sweep the place.' After this he was to help the preceptor to dress and get his alms-bowl ready if he wished to go out to beg. If the preceptor desired it, the pupil was to follow him as his attendant on the begging tour, keeping not too far away and not too near him. If the preceptor spoke he was not to interrupt him. After the begging was over the pupil was to get back quickly to the monastery, prepare a seat, get water for the washing of his feet, a foot-stool, and a towel. Then he must go and meet the preceptor and take his bowl and robe from him. He must fold the robe and attend to the clothes of the preceptor. If the preceptor wishes to eat the food in the alms-bowl, he must bring him water and then offer him food. After the meal the pupil must wash and dry the bowl and put it away, and also put away the robe. After the preceptor has risen the pupil must take away the seat, and put away the water for the washing of feet, the foot-stool and the towel. If the place was dirty he was to sweep it. Then he was to help the preceptor to bathe, getting for him cold or hot water, or accompanying him to the bathing place if he wished to go there. The pupil also bathed at the same time, but had to dry and dress himself quickly so as to be ready to help the preceptor. After the bathing was completed he was to ask the preceptor for a discourse, or ask him questions. Elaborate

directions are given as to the procedure to be followed by the novice in cleaning out the *vihāra*—the cell, store-room, refectory, fire-room, etc. The novice must also see that there is drinkable water and food, and water for rinsing the mouth. The pupil was also to act as a check, as it were, upon the preceptor, in keeping him steadfast in the faith. If he became discontented the pupil was to try and appease him, or get someone else to do this. If indecision arose in his mind or he had become tainted with false doctrines, the pupil was to try and win him back. If the preceptor was guilty of a grave offence, the pupil was to take care that the *sangha* sentenced him to discipline and also that he was rehabilitated after the penance was complete, but he was at the same time to get the *sangha* to forego, or mitigate, any severe discipline which it might wish to impose upon his preceptor. The pupil was to see that the robe of the preceptor was washed, or made, or dyed, according to need. He was not to accept presents or give presents, or wait on anyone else, or go out without the permission of the preceptor. If the preceptor was sick he was to wait upon him and nurse him diligently.<sup>1</sup>

The preceptor, on the other hand, had his responsibility towards the pupil.<sup>2</sup>

'The *upajjhāya*, *O bhikkhus*, ought to observe a strict conduct towards his *saddhivihārika*. Let the *upajjhāya*, *O bhikkhus*, afford spiritual help and furtherance to the *saddhivihārika* by teaching, by putting questions to him, by exhortation, by instruction.' He was to see that he possessed an alms-bowl, a robe, and the other simple articles which a *bhikkhu* was allowed to possess. If the pupil was sick the preceptor was not only to nurse him, but to wait on him, and to attend to him just as the pupil was required to wait upon himself in health. He was to see that the

<sup>1</sup> *Mahāvagga*, i, 25. <sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, i, 26.

pupil washed his robe, and show him how to make and dye it.

Only in certain prescribed cases could a pupil be turned away by his preceptor. A *bhikkhu* could not accept the office of preceptor till he had himself been a *bhikkhu* for ten years, and was learned and competent.<sup>1</sup>

These were the regulations for the mutual conduct of preceptor and pupil, which were drawn up at some early period before the days of King Aśoka. A Chinese visitor, I-Tsing, who was in India between A.D. 673 and 687, shows us how the system was working at the time of his visit. After referring to the directions in the *Vinaya* text, quoted above, he says:<sup>2</sup>

'The following is also the manner in which a pupil waits on his teacher in India. He goes to his teacher at the first watch and at the last watch of the night. First the teacher bids him sit down comfortably. Selecting some passages from the *Tripiṭaka*, he gives a lesson in a way that suits circumstances, and does not pass any fact or theory unexplained. He inspects his pupil's moral conduct, and warns him of defects and transgression; whenever he finds his pupil faulty he makes him seek remedies and repent. The pupil rubs the teacher's body, folds his clothes, or sometimes sweeps the apartment and the yard. Then having examined water to see whether insects be in it, he gives it to the teacher. Thus, if there be anything to be done, he does all on behalf of his teacher. This is the manner in which one pays respect to one's superior. On the other hand, in case of a pupil's illness, his teacher himself nurses him, supplies all the medicine needed, and pays attention to him as if he were his child.'

Thus the monastic system, which was an important feature of Buddhism, provided that every novice on his

<sup>1</sup> *Mahāvagga*, i, 27. <sup>2</sup> I-Tsing (Takakusu's translation), p. 120.

admission should place himself under the supervision and guidance of a preceptor, and this state of pupillage was to last for ten years. I-Tsing says<sup>1</sup> that after five years from the time that the pupil masters the *Vinaya*, he was allowed to live apart from his teacher, but he must put himself under the care of some teacher wherever he went until ten years have elapsed after he was able to understand the *Vinaya*. The main ideas of this connexion of teacher and pupil were taken over from Brāhmanic education, and are in close similarity to it. From this provision for the instruction of novices arose the Buddhist educational system.

At first, no doubt, the primary idea was to provide for the proper instruction of the novice in the doctrines of the Buddhist faith, and to secure some supervision over his conduct while he was becoming habituated to the monastic life. Buddhism, indeed, exists to abolish ignorance, but it is not primarily concerned with the intellect or with the promotion of learning. The ignorance which is to be abolished is ignorance of a small number of practical doctrines, such as the necessary connexion of sorrow with existence, and the need of extinguishing desire. The pursuit of secular knowledge would almost seem, from one point of view, to be contrary to the spirit and purpose of Buddhism, and yet we know that the Buddhist monastic institutions often became in course of time places of general learning. A person who is on his way to the attainment of perfect knowledge of things in themselves—that is, one who is determined to become a future Buddha—is called, according to the Mahāyāna form of Buddhism, a *Bodhisattva*. To reach this high estate he has to pass through certain stages, and among some of the stages which came to be recognized by Mahāyāna teaching are those in which

<sup>1</sup> I-Tsing, p. 119.

intellectual pursuits and study are required.<sup>1</sup> This development of ideas, however, only took place after Buddhism had existed for a long time.

The practice of Buddhist education probably varied very much in different countries and at different times, and only gradually did the monasteries become centres of educational importance, teaching not only the doctrines of Buddhism but also other subjects. No doubt the existence of Brāhmanic learning would form an example and incentive to the Buddhist monks to engage in study.

We get a valuable picture of Buddhist education as it existed in India from the records left by certain Chinese Buddhist scholars, who visited India in the fifth and seventh centuries of our era. Their chief purpose in visiting India was to study Pāli and Sanskrit and secure copies of the sacred books of Buddhism to take back with them to their own land. Their long, toilsome, and dangerous journeys would hardly have been undertaken unless the fame of the Buddhist monasteries in India as places of learning had reached as far as China.

Fā-hien, who was in India between A.D. 399 and 414, makes frequent references to monasteries, and says that the regular business of the monks was to perform acts of meritorious virtue and to recite their *Sūtras*, and sit wrapt in meditation.<sup>2</sup> In speaking of the monastery at Pātaliputra, or Patna, he says:<sup>3</sup>

'By the side of the tope of Aśoka there has been made a Mahāyāna monastery, very grand and beautiful; there is also a Hinayāna one; the two together containing six or seven hundred monks. The rules of demeanour and the scholastic arrangements in them are worthy of observation. Śāmans (monks) of the highest virtue from all quarters,

<sup>1</sup> See *Enc. Rel. and Ethics*, article on Bodhisattva, pp. 739ff.

<sup>2</sup> Fā-hien (Legge's translation), p. 44, <sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 78.

and students, inquirers wishing to find out truth and the grounds of it, all resort to these monasteries.'

Fā-hien spent three years at Patna<sup>1</sup> learning Sanskrit and Sanskrit books, and making copies of the Buddhist sacred works. He stayed also at Tamralipti (near the mouth of the Hooghly) and at other places. In the Panjab he found that the oral method of instruction was used, but in the more eastern regions of India writing was more freely used. Nālanda was visited by Fā-hien, but it had apparently no monks or monastery.

About two hundred years later came Hiuen Tsiang (A.D. 629 to 645). He found Buddhism still flourishing, though a revival of Brāhmanism had taken place. The Mahāyāna form of Buddhism was spreading and the Hinayānā form declining. He mentions monasteries at a great many places but also speaks of some as in ruins. Some of these monasteries were very large, and often there were groups of them in one place. Thus at Hiranya-parvata, on the Ganges, there were ten *sangharāmas* (or monasteries) with about four thousand monks, and at Tamralipti also there were ten with a thousand monks. At Tiladaka, only twenty-one miles west of Nālanda, there was a monastery, with regard to which he says:<sup>2</sup>

'This building has four halls, belvederes of three stages, high towers, connected at intervals with double gates that open inwards. It was built by the last descendant of Bimbisārāraja. He made much of high talent and exalted the virtuous. Learned men from different cities, and scholars from different countries, flock together in crowds, and reaching so far abide in this *sangharāma*. There are a thousand priests in it, who study the Great Vehicle.'

But the most important Buddhist centre of learning by this time was at Nālanda, which was famous far and wide

<sup>1</sup> Fā-hien, pp. 98ff. <sup>2</sup> Hiuen Tsiang (Beal's translation), ii, p. 102.

for its learning. Hiuen Tsiang makes frequent reference to it as a place of learning, and describes it as follows:<sup>1</sup>

'The priests, to the number of several thousands, are men of the highest ability and talent. Their distinction is very great at the present time, and there are many hundreds, whose fame has rapidly spread through distant regions. Their conduct is pure and unblameable. They follow in sincerity the precepts of the moral law. The rules of this convent are severe and all the priests are bound to observe them. The countries of India respect them and follow them. The day is not sufficient for asking and answering profound questions. From morning till night they engage in discussion; the old and the young mutually help one another. Those who cannot discuss questions out of the *Tripiṭaka* are little esteemed and are obliged to hide themselves for shame. Learned men from different cities, on this account, who desire to acquire quickly a renown in discussion, come here in multitudes to settle their doubts, and then the streams of their wisdom spread far and wide. For this reason some persons usurp the name (of Nālanda students) and in going to and fro receive honour in consequence. If men of other quarters desire to enter and take part in discussions, the keeper of the gate proposes some hard questions; many are unable to answer, and retire. One must have studied deeply both old and new (books) before getting admission.' He goes on to say that seventy or eighty per cent of such would-be residents of Nālanda failed to pass the test for admission. He also mentions a long list of celebrated teachers who lived at Nālanda and not only taught but composed treatises, commentaries, and other works.

Not very long after Hiuen Tsiang's departure another Chinese scholar, I-Tsing, came to India. He was in the

<sup>1</sup> Hiuen Tsiang (Beal's translation), ii, pp. 170ff.

country from A.D. 673 to 687. His travels in India were not so extended as those of Fā-hien and Hiuen Tsiang, but he stayed ten years at Nālanda which was still a flourishing centre of learning. He says<sup>1</sup> with regard to it that the rites of the monastery were very strict and consequently the number of residents was great and exceeded three thousand. It had eight halls and three hundred apartments.<sup>2</sup> The lands in its possession contained more than two hundred villages. They had been bestowed upon it by kings of many generations. 'Thus,' says I-Tsing,<sup>3</sup> 'the prosperity of the religion continues ever owing to nothing but the fact that the *Vinaya* is being strictly carried out.' The hours of work and of worship in Nālanda, as well as in other monasteries, were regulated by using clepsydras.<sup>4</sup>

I-Tsing gives us a most interesting idea of the study carried on at Nālanda. This no doubt illustrates the state of Buddhist higher learning at the period as studied in all the more important places of education. He says<sup>5</sup> that the pupil, after attending to the service of his teacher, 'reads a portion of scripture and reflects on what he had learnt. He acquires new knowledge day by day, and searches into old subjects month after month, without losing a minute.' In speaking of the method of learning he refers to Pāṇini's *Sūtras* and other grammatical works which he says<sup>6</sup> had to be learnt by heart. Apparently some preliminary study was often done before entering Nālanda, for he says that 'after studying grammar, etc., under instructors, they pass two or three years at Nālanda or in the country of Valabhī (western India)'. Grammar seems to have been the foundation of all other studies and to have received great attention.

'Grammatical science,' he says,<sup>7</sup> 'is called in Sanskrit *Sabdadīvya*, one of the five *Vidyās*.' (The five *Vidyās* are:

<sup>1</sup> I-Tsing, p. 65. <sup>2</sup> Ibid., p. 154. <sup>3</sup> Ibid., p. 65. <sup>4</sup> Ibid., p. 145.  
<sup>5</sup> Ibid., p. 116. <sup>6</sup> Ibid., p. 167. <sup>7</sup> Ibid., pp. 169ff.

(1) *Śabdavidyā*, grammar and lexicography; (2) *Śilpasthānavidyā*, arts; (3) *Chikitsavidyā*, medicine; (3) *Hetuvidyā*, logic; and (5) *Adhyātmavidyā*, science of the universal soul, or philosophy.) ‘*Śabda* means “sound”, and *Vidyā*, “science”. The name for the general secular literature of India is *Vyākaraṇa* (i.e. Grammar), of which there are about five works, similar to the five classics of the Divine Land (China).’ These five he enumerates as follows:

(1) ‘The *Siddha*-composition for beginners....Children learn this book when they are six years old, and finish it in six months.’

(2) ‘The *Sūtra* is the foundation of all grammatical science ....It contains a thousand *ślokas* and is the work of Pāṇini....Children begin to learn the *Sūtra* when they are eight years old, and can repeat it in eight months’ time.’

(3) ‘The book on *Dhātu*’ (verbal roots).

(4) ‘The book on the three *Khilas* (or ‘pieces of waste land’) viz. *Aṣṭadhātu*, *Manda*, and *Uṇādi*.’ (The first deals with cases and conjunctions, and the others with the formation of words from root and suffix or suffixes.) ‘Boys begin to learn the book on the three *Khilas* when they are ten years old, and understand them thoroughly after three years’ diligent study.’

(5) ‘The *Vṛitti-Sūtra* (*Kāśikāvṛitti*). This is a commentary on the foregoing *Sūtra* (i.e. Pāṇini’s *Sūtra*)....Boys of fifteen begin to study this commentary, and understand it after five years.’

There thus seems to have been a long course of grammatical study of the Sanskrit language, beginning when a boy was six years of age and lasting till he was twenty, which was a preliminary to the study of higher subjects. With regard to this further study I-Tsing says:<sup>1</sup> ‘After having studied this commentary, students begin to learn

<sup>1</sup> I-Tsing, pp. 176ff.

composition in prose and verse and devote themselves to logic (*hetuvidyā*) and metaphysics (*abhidharmakośa*). In learning the *Nyāyādvāratarka-śastra* (introduction to logic), they rightly draw inferences (*anumāna*); and by studying the *Jātakamālā* (stories of Buddha in previous birth) their powers of comprehension increase. Thus instructed by their teachers, and instructing others, they pass two or three years, generally in the Nālanda monastery in Central India, or in the country of Valabha (Walā) in western India. These two places are like Chinma, Shihch'u Lungmen, and Ch'ueli in China, and there eminent and accomplished men assemble in crowds, discuss possible and impossible doctrines, and after having been assured of the excellence of their opinions by wise men, become far-famed for their wisdom. To try the sharpness of their wit they proceed to the king's court to lay down before it the sharp weapon of their abilities; there they present their schemes and show their (political) talent, seeking to be appointed in the practical government. When they are present in the House of Debate, they rise from their seats and seek to prove their wonderful cleverness. When they are refuting heretical doctrines all their opponents become tongue-tied, and acknowledge themselves undone. Then the sound of their fame makes the five mountains (of India) vibrate, and their renown flows, as it were, over the four borders. They receive grants of land and are advanced to a high rank; their famous names are, as a reward, written in white on their lofty gates. After this they can follow whatever occupation they like.'

It is apparently in connexion with this higher course that he mentions certain other books which were studied, namely:

(6) 'The *Chūrṇī*' (i.e. the *Mahābhāshya*, or Great Commentary of Patanjali on Pāṇini's *Sūtras*).

- (7) 'The *Bhartṛihari Śāstra* treats of principles of human life as well as of grammatical science.'
- (8) 'The *Vākya* discourse'—a treatise on the Inference supported by the authority of the sacred teaching, and on Inductive argument.
- (9) 'The *Pei-na*' (perhaps *Beda* or *Veda*), which was a work on philosophy.

The priests, also, he tells us, learned besides, all the *Vinaya* works, and investigated the *Sūtras* and *Śāstras* as well.

This valuable picture of Buddhist learning and education in the monasteries at the time of I-Tsing's visit shows a great amount of intellectual activity going on. The main course seems to have been founded on an elaborate study of Sanskrit grammar which led on to logic and finally to metaphysics and philosophy. It is closely connected with the Brāhmanic education in that the first six out of the nine works which he mentions as being studied were those also used in the Brāhman schools. The last three, however, were composed, I-Tsing tells us, by Bhartṛihari,<sup>1</sup> who was a member of the Buddhist order. The method seems to have been chiefly oral, and he frequently insists that these various treatises must be learned by heart. I-Tsing has a passage in which he says,<sup>2</sup> 'There are two traditional ways in India of attaining to intellectual power; (1) committing to memory; (2) the alphabet fixes one's ideas. By this way, after a practice of ten days or a month, a student feels his thought rise like a fountain, and can commit to memory whatever he has once heard. This is far from being a myth, for I myself have met such men.' The meaning of this passage is by no means clear, but it certainly brings out the

<sup>1</sup> For Bhartṛihari, see Macdonell, *Sans. Lit.*, pp. 340, 381, 382. He died in A.D. 651. <sup>2</sup> I-Tsing, p. 183.

prevalent practice of learning everything by heart and shows what facility students seem to have gained in doing this. A great place was also given to discussion and debate, at least in the higher part of the course, and a man's ability seems to have been very largely judged by his power to vanquish opponents in discussion. It was such men apparently who got royal appointments and whose names were, 'as a reward, written in white on their lofty gates'.

<sup>3</sup> The *Jātaka* stories and the *Vinaya* and other texts which were studied gave some of the elements of the study of literature, and I-Tsing mentions<sup>1</sup> the composition of poems as one of the occupations of the residents at the monasteries. Great attention seems to have been given at Nālanda to the practice of singing or chanting, and I-Tsing was anxious that this should be introduced in his own country.

Medicine seems to have been studied, though not forming part of the ordinary course. It was no doubt taken up by specialists. I-Tsing refers to a *Śāstra* on medical science and makes considerable mention of various forms of medical treatment; and Fā-hien, who was in India two hundred years before I-Tsing, mentions the dispensaries and hospitals which existed at Patna.<sup>1</sup> Medicine seems to have been specially cultivated by the Buddhists; and Charaka, who is one of the chief Indian authorities on medicine, is said to have been the court physician of the Buddhist King Kanishka in the first century A.D. There is no evidence that law and mathematics were cultivated in the Buddhist schools of learning. Probably law was already regarded too much as an exclusive possession of the Brāhmans to make instruction by others possible. According to the Chinese travellers who visited Nālanda astronomy was studied there.

Though Buddhism encouraged a life of separation from

<sup>1</sup> I-Tsing, p. 154. <sup>2</sup> Fā-hien, p. 79.

the world and the suppression of desire, it did not, like Brāhmanism, advocate asceticism and bodily mortification, and the care of the bodily health was considered as of importance for improvement in the spiritual condition. We find that exercise was encouraged in the Buddhist monasteries of India, and I-Tsing tells us<sup>1</sup> that, 'in India both priests and laymen are generally in the habit of taking walks, going backwards and forwards along a path, at suitable hours, and at their pleasure; they avoid noisy places. Firstly it cures disease, and secondly it helps to digest food. The walking hours are in the forenoon, and late in the afternoon. They either go away (for a walk) from their monasteries, or stroll quietly along the corridors . . . If any one adopts this habit of walking he will keep his body well, and thereby improve his religious merit.'

I-Tsing seems to have had a very favourable impression of the school of learning at Nālanda where he spent so many years. He mentions by name many distinguished teachers whom he met and with whom he conversed, and says;<sup>2</sup> 'I have always been very glad that I had the opportunity of acquiring knowledge from them personally, which I should otherwise never have possessed, and that I could refresh my memory of past study by comparing old notes with new ones.'

Thus arising out of the duty of the *bhikkhus* to teach and spread their doctrines and of the relation of teacher and pupil which the discipline of the order required, the Buddhist monastery had become a place where not only the Buddhist doctrines were studied, but also much secular knowledge. No doubt the content of this was meagre judged by modern standards, but it does not compare very unfavourably with the content of other ancient systems of education. Was this system of general culture confined to

<sup>1</sup> I-Tsing, p. 114. <sup>2</sup> Ibid., pp. 184, 185.

those who had entered the sacred order either as monks or as novices, or was it also shared by those who were preparing to take a more active part in the affairs of the world? It seems clear from what I-Tsing tells us, that the monastery was a place of instruction not only for those who had joined the order as a life-long profession, but for others also. He tells us, for instance, in a passage quoted above, that the debate which was held in the king's court was in order that students might show their talent, and thus obtain appointments in the practical government. He also tells us that after completing their course students could 'follow whatever occupation they like'. But there is a passage which puts the matter still more clearly and leaves no doubt upon the question.<sup>1</sup> 'Those white-robed (laymen) who come to the residence of a priest and read chiefly Buddhist scriptures with the intention that they may one day become tonsured and black-robed, are called "children" (*mānava*). Those who (coming to a priest) want to learn secular literature only, without having any intention of quitting the world, are called "students" (*brahmachāri*). These two groups of persons, though residing in a monastery, have to subsist at their own expense. In the monasteries in India there are many "students" who are entrusted to *bhikkhus* and instructed by them in secular literature. On the one hand the "students" serve under priests as pages, on the other the instruction will lead to pious aspirations. It is therefore very good to keep them, inasmuch as both sides are benefited in this way.'

This passage makes it quite clear that there were in the monastery not only the professed monks and novices, but also those who were studying the Buddhist scriptures with a view to joining the order and also those who had no

<sup>1</sup> I-Tsing, p. 105.

intention of doing so, but were residing at the monastery only for the sake of education. This practice also may have been influenced by the Brāhmaṇ schools which were open not only to young Brāhmaṇs who were destined for the priestly office, but to others of the twice-born castes as well. There was nothing to prevent a man who had joined the Buddhist order from returning to the world, and probably many did so, and with regard to Bhartṛihari, who composed some of the works I-Tsing refers to, he tells us<sup>1</sup> that he became seven times a priest, but seven times returned to the laity, and that he wrote the following verse full of self-reproval:

‘Through the enticement of the world I returned to  
the laity.

Being free from secular pleasures again I wear the  
priestly cloak.

How do these two impulses play with me as if a  
child?’

I-Tsing adds, ‘At last he returned to the position of a lay devotee (*upāsaka*), and wearing a white garment continued to exalt and promote the true religion, being still in the monastery.’

The story of this man illustrates what was probably frequently the case, that some joined the order without continuing in it, but it is also interesting as showing how one of the foremost teachers of the monastery was a man who did not continue in the order but finished his career as a layman.

After the visits of these Chinese pilgrims we have but scanty evidence as to the course and development of Buddhist education in India, but the monasteries long continued as centres of education and literary study, and

<sup>1</sup>. I-Tsing, p. 179.

only decayed as Buddhism itself decayed in India. Dr. S. C. Vidyabhusana<sup>1</sup> mentions the following medieval centres of Buddhist learning, namely Kāñchipura,<sup>2</sup> Nālanda, Odantapuri,<sup>3</sup> Śri Dhanyakataka, Kāśmira and Vikramāśilā. Reference to some of these places of learning is made in a later chapter.

It seems that, apart from the monasteries, Buddhism did not offer any educational opportunities, but we have to ask the question as to how far, during all the centuries that Buddhism existed in India, Buddhist education influenced the general mass of the people, at least those who adhered to Buddhism, and provided opportunities for popular instruction. In more modern times in some Buddhist countries it is said that almost all boys went to the monastery and received at least some elementary education at the hands of the monks. Thus in Burma before the country came under British control almost the whole male population passed through the monasteries, and were taught by the monks.<sup>4</sup> Those who did not intend to join the religious order stayed till they were about twelve years of age and received instruction in reading, writing and arithmetic, as well as some religious instruction. There is no doubt that this system of popular education in connexion with the Buddhist monastery is an ancient custom, and it has been claimed that the presence of Buddhist monasteries in India in ancient times implies a widespread popular education there during the time that they flourished.<sup>5</sup> There does not, however, seem to be any very clear evidence of this, and we cannot say how it became the practice for the monasteries to give education of a popular kind. The question of the origin of popular education in India will be discussed in the later chapter

<sup>1</sup> Medieval School of Indian Logic. <sup>2</sup>i.e. Conjeeveram. <sup>3</sup> Or Uddandapura. <sup>4</sup> Shway Yeo, ch. ii. <sup>5</sup> V.A. Smith, *Aśoka*, p. 108.

on the subject, but it may be said here, that even if facilities existed for general instruction as early as the reign of King Aśoka, it was not necessarily in connexion with the monasteries that it was given.

At the time, however, of the visit of Fā-hien, (from A.D. 399 to A.D. 414), we find that the monasteries seem to have begun to undertake instruction of a more general kind than merely instructing those who joined the *sangha* in the precepts of Buddhism. In speaking of the monasteries at Patna, he says<sup>1</sup> that the rules of demeanour and the scholastic arrangements in them were worthy of observation, and that students and inquirers wishing to find out the truth and the grounds of it resorted thither. In a note of Fā-hien's reference to the 'scholastic arrangements' at Patna, Prof. Legge says: 'Why should there not have been schools in those monasteries in India as there were in China? Fā-hien himself grew up with other boys in a monastery, and no doubt had to go to school. And the next sentence shows us there might be schools for more advanced students as well as for the *srāmaneras*.' There seems no reason to doubt that by the time of Fā-hien the monasteries may have given some general instruction not only to young novices, but even to pupils who had no intention of joining the *sangha*. At all events this system was in full swing at the time of I-Tsing's visit. But even the presence of pupils who were not intending to join the order of monks does not warrant us, without other evidence, in thinking that such education was taken advantage of by a large proportion of the children of Buddhist parents, or included popular elementary instruction. The education which I-Tsing describes was education of a higher rather than of a popular type, and was based on a profound and lengthy study of Sanskrit grammar. It

<sup>1</sup> Fā-hien, p. 78

would, of course, seem likely that there were arrangements for the teaching of reading and writing to lads who were taking this course, but I-Tsing makes no mention of this, nor of the teaching of arithmetic. It is not, therefore, possible to say for certain, even at the time of I-Tsing's visit, whether literacy was widely diffused amongst the Buddhist population or not. It would seem, however, not unlikely that when once the monasteries had begun to receive pupils who were not intending to join the community the system might have been gradually extended and have catered even for boys who only came to learn the three R's and receive some simple religious instruction, and the analogy of Buddhist schools as they exist in Burma and Ceylon even down to the present day would seem to confirm this. If, as seems not unreasonable to suppose, the Buddhist monasteries came to supply a good deal of popular elementary instruction, the decay of Buddhism and consequent disappearance of the monasteries would have meant that this method of giving popular education would also have gradually come to an end, and so the need would arise for this education to be supplied in some other way. This may have been one amongst other causes which led to the spread of the indigenous elementary schools in India.

A description of the education carried on in Ceylon in a Buddhist school, as given by a writer<sup>1</sup> who wrote about the middle of last century, may help us to form some picture of what the Buddhist schools in India were probably like, though difference of country and lapse of time may have involved many changes. He says that there was generally a school attached to a *pansal*, or residence of a Buddhist priest. The children did not all attend at the same period

<sup>1</sup> R.S. Hardy, *Eastern Monachism*, pp. 18 and 313ff.

of day, but as they had leisure went to the *pansal* to repeat their lessons, and then returned home, or went to their employment in some other place. The school was a mere shed open at the sides, with a raised platform in one corner covered with sand, on which letters were traced by the finger of the child learning to write. Lessons were usually repeated aloud, and were recited in a singing tone, several boys frequently joining in chorus. The alphabet was first learned, and was usually copied upon *tal* leaves; after that the union of vowels and consonants. Then the pupil began to write letters upon sand, holding in the left hand a piece of wood to erase what he had written. The course of reading included about fourteen books: (1) A name book, which was a collection of names of villages, countries, temples, caves, etc.; (2) an enumeration of the various signs and beauties upon the person of Buddha; (3) stanzas in honour of Buddha, Truth, etc., with some grammatical rules also; (4) an account of the birth of Ganeśa, etc.; (5) stanzas in praise of Buddha in Elu, Pāli and Sanskrit; (6) Navaratna ('the nine jewels')—a description and eulogy of the nine most precious things in the world, the principal of which is Buddha; (7) Sanskrit proverbs with explanations; (8) Sanskrit stanzas in honour of Buddha with explanation; (9) Sanskrit stanzas containing the names of the last twenty-four Buddhas, etc.; (10) Pāli stanzas in honour of Buddha; (11) Sanskrit stanzas in honour of the sun; (12) Sanskrit stanzas on the management of the voice in recitation; (13) Pāli stanzas in honour of Buddha; (14) the *Amarakośa*, or Sanskrit lexicon, with a Singhalese commentary. This was the complete curriculum for a Singhalese student unless he was preparing for the priesthood or for the medical profession. Even this course was only completed by a few of the boys who attended the *pansal* schools.

In schools in Buddhist monasteries in Burma<sup>1</sup> the condition of affairs is very similar,<sup>2</sup> or, at least, was so before the introduction of Western ideas of education. When a boy is about eight or nine years of age he goes as a pupil to the monastery, which is open to all, rich and poor alike. He does not, however, become a novice until twelve or fifteen years of age, when it is the custom to assume the yellow robe of the monastic order at least for a short time. Some boys are boarders, others attend the monastery every day. The instruction begins by teaching a boy the letters of the alphabet written on a rough wooden slate. These he learns by shouting them out at the top of his voice. All the books which are learnt are religious ones, and the curriculum includes the learning of Pāli formulae and prayers necessary for religious worship. The life and sayings of Buddha and the *Jātakas* are the chief elements of instruction. The pupils repeat their lessons word for word after their teacher, as they sit in rows before him, and chant after him all in the same key. The amount of secular learning, arithmetic, and so on, is most meagre. Boys designated for a monastic life stay on permanently, but those intended for lay life leave at twelve years of age or even earlier. Nowadays many boys attend the government or the mission schools but they often go to the monastery first. Although the curriculum in the monastic schools is of such a meagre description the educational opportunities which they have provided have led to a very high percentage of literacy amongst the male population of Burma, which is very much higher than in India and Pakistan.

Apart from the monasteries or nunneries Buddhism did

<sup>1</sup> For an interesting account of Buddhist education in recent times in Tibet see S. C. Das, *Indian Pandits in the Land of Snow*, 1893, pp.3-11.

<sup>2</sup> Shway Yeo, ch. ii.

not provide educational opportunities, but the sons of Buddhist laymen, who did not go to the *sangharāma* for instruction, would learn their own craft or profession from their fathers in the same way as other Indian craftsmen, and had also the opportunity of attending whatever popular schools may have existed. The question of women's education in the Buddhist system is discussed in another chapter.

Buddhism almost ceased to exist in India as a separate religion, but in recent times, however, many in India have adopted the Buddhist faith. It had a considerable influence upon Indian philosophic thought and religious ideals, but on the educational side it is difficult to estimate the amount of its influence. Its curriculum was meagre, and, such as it was, was mostly borrowed or adapted from the Brāhmanic schools. The *Vedas* were replaced by its own sacred books. Medicine and logic<sup>1</sup> seem to have been the two subjects in which the Buddhist schools were distinguished if we leave out of account their influence on philosophic thought. Medieval Indian logic from about A.D. 400 to 1200 was almost entirely in the hands of Jains and Buddhists, and their books on this subject are very numerous. The Buddhist educational ideals and practice also were derived from, or closely connected with, those of Brāhmanism. It is not, however, improbable, that in breaking down the monopoly of Brāhmanic schools and offering the possibility of education to men of all castes, Buddhism may have done something to extend amongst the people of India the desire for some popular education besides the training of craftsmen, and to have stimulated a demand which led to the growth of the popular elementary schools which are described in a later chapter.

<sup>1</sup> For Buddhist Logic, see Dr. S. C. Vidyabhusana, *The Medieval School of Indian Logic*.

## CHAPTER VII

### MUSLIM EDUCATION

In the Korān education is urged as a duty, and in Muslim countries learning has usually been held in great esteem, even when it has not been widespread amongst the people.

If the attainments in Muslim education in India<sup>1</sup> did not reach such a high point as in some other Muslim lands it is at least partly accounted for by India being separated remotely from the rest of the Muslim world.

The social status of the teachers was high and they were generally men of character who had the confidence and respect of their fellow-men. The relation between teacher and pupil was similar to that which existed in the case of Brāhmanic education. The monitorial system, in which the more advanced pupils were associated with the masters in the work of teaching, is a special feature of Indian education and it was in use in Muslim as well as in Hindu schools.

The Muslim rulers of India generally took a keen interest in education, and many of them founded schools, colleges, and libraries in various places in their dominions. The example of the rulers was followed by many of their influential subjects. Scholars, poets, and other literary men were often encouraged by the patronage of the court or of private individuals. Stipends and scholarships were often given to pupils and in many places orphanages were established.

The permanent settlement of Muslims in India, and the conversion of some of the inhabitants to Islām, meant the establishment of mosques, and as in other Muslim countries, the mosque, especially in towns, was a centre of instruction and of literary activity. Muslim educational

<sup>1</sup> Jaffar, pp. 1-11.

institutions<sup>1</sup> are distinguished as *maktab*s or *madrasahs*. The *maktab* is a primary school often attached to a mosque, the chief business of which is to instruct boys in those portions of the Korān which a Muslim is expected to know by heart in order to perform his devotions and other religious functions. Sometimes instruction in reading, writing, and simple arithmetic was also included in the curriculum. Primary education was also carried on in private houses. *Madrasahs* were schools for higher learning. They too were generally attached to mosques and monasteries. Some of them might rise to the status of universities. The course included grammar, rhetoric, logic, theology, metaphysics, literature, jurisprudence and science. Certain subjects were more cultivated in some centres than in others. The medium of instruction in these schools was Persian, but the study of Arabic was compulsory for Muslims.

The Muslims first appeared in India in the eighth century A.D., but the real storm of Muslim aggression burst on India under Mahmūd of Ghaznī, who is said to have made no less than seventeen raids into India from A.D. 1000 to 1026. He was a stern opponent of idolatry, and with fierce iconoclastic zeal he broke down temples and smashed idols and carried off many captives and much wealth to his own capital. To the inhabitants of India Mahmūd must have appeared as anything but a promoter of education and learning, for during his raids the Brāhmaṇ educational centres often suffered severely, and the learned Brāhmaṇs, who lived and taught there, were often killed or put to flight. In his own kingdom of Ghaznī, Mahmūd,<sup>2</sup> however, was a great patron of education on Muslim lines.

<sup>1</sup> Jaffar, pp. 17-20. <sup>2</sup> N. N. Law, *Promotion of Learning in India during Muhammadan Rule*, pp. 3ff.; Ferishta (translated by J. Briggs), i. 61; Jaffar, pp. 37, 38.

He gave large sums of money for the support of learned men and poets, and at his capital he established a seat of learning which was resorted to by literary men from far and near. Amongst them was the poet, Firdausī. Mahmūd's immediate successor is said to have founded schools and colleges, and the patronage of learning was continued. All this, however, was really outside India.

Mahmūd's successors were unable to hold what their father had won, and a new power arose at Ghor, west of Ghazni, which overthrew the Ghaznavids. It was Muhammad Ghori (1174-1206) who really laid the foundations of the Muslim domination of India. In 1192 he established his power at Delhi. Muhammad Ghori is reported to have destroyed some temples at Ajmere, and to have built in their places mosques and colleges.<sup>1</sup> He had a great fancy for adopting some of his promising young slaves and giving them a good education. This education combined training in the work of governing with literary instruction. Amongst the slaves whom he thus educated was Kutb-ud-din, who succeeded his master in 1210 at Delhi, and was the first of what is called the Slave Dynasty. Kutb-ud-din was a man of literary tastes,<sup>2</sup> and although, like many other Muslim rulers, he destroyed Hindu temples, he built many mosques which were centres not only of religious worship but also of education. An officer of his, named Bakhtiyār, destroyed at Vikramaśilā in Bihār a Buddhist monastic institution which was a place of learning, but he also is said to have been an establisher of mosques and colleges.<sup>3</sup> There is mention<sup>4</sup> of a *madrasah*, or college, built by Altamsh (1210-36), the successor of Kutb-ud-din; and his daughter Raziya, who ruled after

<sup>1</sup> Law, pp. 17, 18; Nadvi, pp. 16; Jaffar, p. 38. <sup>2</sup> Nadvi, p. 17; Jaffar, pp. 39ff. <sup>3</sup> Law, pp. 19, 20; Ferishta, i, 190; Nadvi, p. 44. <sup>4</sup> Law, p. 21; Jaffar, p. 40.

her father's death, was a woman of some education, and was a patron of learning. A college existed at Delhi during her reign.<sup>1</sup> Nasir-ud-din (1246-66) and Balban (1266-87) both encouraged learning.<sup>2</sup> The former is said to have been a student, and in Balban's reign many literary societies are said to have flourished at Delhi under the patronage of his son, Prince Muhammad.<sup>3</sup> There is mention of a college at Jalandhar in the reign of Nasir-ud-din. Balban's successor was a profligate youth who gave no encouragement to men of letters.

In the Khalji dynasty<sup>4</sup> (1290-1320) Jalāl-ud-din was a man of great literary tastes. Alā-ud-din at first showed no favour to education. He even confiscated the endowments which had been given for its support by his predecessors. He is said at first to have been illiterate, but afterwards he learnt Persian and gave more encouragement to learned men. By this time, however, Delhi had become a great centre of learning, and continued to be so in spite of the discouraging policy of Alā-ud-din. The endowments were restored by his successor, who was in other ways a worthless character.

Under the Tughlak monarchs<sup>5</sup> (1325-1413) Muslim education in India seems to have made considerable progress. It was encouraged by Ghiyās-ud-din Tughlak; and his successor, Muhammad Tughlak, is said to have been a man of great learning who gave great encouragement and help to scholars. But his good intentions and efforts were to a great extent spoiled by the wild scheme he projected of building a capital at Daulatābad and compelling all the inhabitants of Delhi to migrate to the new city. This caused great misery, which was hardly alleviated by the

<sup>1</sup> Law, p. 22; Nadvi, p. 17; Jaffar, pp. 40f. <sup>2</sup> Law, p. 25 <sup>3</sup> Ibid., p. 24; Jaffar, p. 43. <sup>4</sup> Law, pp. 30-41; Jaffar, p. 44. <sup>5</sup> Law, pp. 42ff.; Nadvi, p. 19; Jaffar, p. 47.

citizens being allowed to return to their old homes when the scheme fell through. This was a great setback to Delhi as a centre of education and learning, as it became bereft of its scholars. It was some time before it could recover. Firūz Tughlak was more successful in his attempt to found a new Delhi, which he called Firūzābād. This city became famous as a literary centre, and Firūz, who was himself an educated man, gave great encouragement to scholars, and bestowed gifts and pensions upon them.<sup>1</sup> Like some of the Muslim sovereigns of India before him he had a special interest in educating young slaves, though he carried it to a farther extent than any of his predecessors. It is said that he maintained no fewer than eighteen thousand of these lads, and large sums must have been spent by him for their support and education. He had some of them apprenticed to craftsmen, while others were set to learn the Korān or the art of copying manuscripts. In the inscription which Firūz placed upon a mosque in his capital of Firūzābād, he mentions<sup>2</sup> amongst his other good works the repair of schools and the alienation of revenue for their support. The Muslim historian Ferishta says<sup>3</sup> that Firūz built no less than thirty colleges with mosques attached. In the college which he founded at his capital students and professors all lived together in the institution, and stipends and scholarships were given for their support. It is evident that under this sovereign considerable advance must have been made in the education of Muslims. The invasion of Taimūr (1398), with its horrors of bloodshed and rapine, must have been as great a setback to education as it was to the political power of the Delhi kingdom. In the time of Sayyid Alā-ud-dīn, Badaun became a great centre of learning,<sup>4</sup> and under Sikandar Lodi, Agra, which had been

<sup>1</sup> Ferishta, i, 462; Nadvi, p. 20; Jaffar, pp. 49-52. <sup>2</sup> Ferishta, i, 464, 465. <sup>3</sup> Ibid., i, 464, 465. <sup>4</sup> Law, p. 71; Nadvi, p. 32; Jaffar, p. 53.

made the capital by his predecessor, also came into prominence as a literary centre.<sup>1</sup> Sikandar insisted on all his military officers having a literary education.

The *madrasahs* and *maktab*s were at first confined to Muslims, but by this time Hindus and Muslims had begun to study one another's languages. The sacred language of Islām was, of course, Arabic, but Persian was the court language of the Muslim conquerors of India, and a knowledge of Persian, and perhaps sometimes also of Arabic, would be necessary for Hindus who held important offices under government. The appointment of Hindus to such offices was beginning to take place. Firuz Shāh, for instance, gave to two Hindus very responsible posts in his administration.<sup>2</sup> The Muslims also were beginning to translate Hindu books into Persian, which involved a knowledge of the Hindu languages. In the reign of Sikandar Lodi the movement developed greatly,<sup>3</sup> and it was about that time that the study of Persian by Hindus began in earnest. The intercourse between the Muslims and Hindus led to the formation of a new language which came to be called Urdu.<sup>4</sup> It is an adaptation of Western Hindī to the common purposes of all classes. It is generally written in Persian characters and has many words of Arabic and Persian origin. The word *Urdu* means literally 'Camp', but the Moguls of India used it only with regard to the Imperial Camp.<sup>5</sup> Urdu was thus the 'camp language' in that sense, but it had reached the form which characterizes it in modern times during the Ghori period and it rapidly came into common use in north India.

While the paramount sovereigns at Delhi were thus developing education amongst their Muslim subjects,

<sup>1</sup> Law, p. 73; Jaffar, pp. 55-8. <sup>2</sup> Law, p. 64. <sup>3</sup> Ibid., p. 75.  
<sup>4</sup> *Calcutta Rev.*, 1884, Art. 'Medieval India', by H.G. Keene, pp. 74-75. <sup>5</sup> Keene, *Moghl Empire*, p. 6; Jaffar, pp. 215-30.

many of the monarchs of the lesser Muslim States, which had become independent of Delhi during the period of disorder which followed the death of Firūz Shāh, were also showing great activity in this direction. In the Bahmanī Kingdom of the Deccan there is the record of the founding of several colleges and schools.<sup>1</sup> The college which Mahmūd Gāwān, minister of Muhammad Shāh (1463-82), built at Bidar, is said to have possessed a library of thousands of volumes. Some of the Bahmanī sovereigns made provision for the education of orphans, appointing funds for their support, and for the learned men engaged to teach them. It has been said that this kingdom possessed a high standard of education according to the current Muslim ideas, and that there were many village schools. Education was also encouraged and colleges built in Bijāpur, Golkonda, Mälwā, Khāndesh, Jaunpur, Mūltān, Gujārāt and Bengal<sup>2</sup> as well as in other centres. The Chahār Minār, which still exists in Hyderabad (Golkonda), once contained a college.<sup>3</sup> In the state of Jaunpur, the capital city of the same name was one of the most famous seats of Muslim learning in India in the Middle Ages.<sup>4</sup>

Besides the efforts of ruling sovereigns there is evidence that the patronage and encouragement of learning, and the foundation of colleges and schools, were also undertaken by many of the nobility and gentry. By the time, then, that the Mogul emperors began to reign in India there must have already existed a great many Muslim colleges and schools in various parts of India. We cannot, of course, always rely on the statements of the historians, many of whom were court favourites, and anxious to show in the best light

<sup>1</sup> Law, pp. 80-90; Nadvi, p. 60; Jaffar, pp. 120ff. <sup>2</sup> Law, pp. 91-113; Nadvi gives an extensive list of Muslim colleges in many different places; see also Jaffar, pp. 117-29. <sup>3</sup> Nadvi p. 70. <sup>4</sup> Nadvi, pp. 40ff.; Jaffar, pp. 61-4.

the activities of their patrons. It seems that colleges which were called into being by royal patrons, and existed by the subsidies which they allowed, easily came to nought if patronage was not continued by their successors, or in times of distress, like Taimūr's invasion. And a college does not necessarily mean a large institution. It may mean no more than a class attached to a mosque with a single teacher in charge. Moreover, it was chiefly in the capitals and other important centres that monarchs are said to have established colleges. But, even making all allowance for exaggeration, it seems quite evident that Muslim higher education, before the invasion of Bābar, must have been established in many important centres, and probably a large number of mosques had attached to them a *maktab*, in which pupils learnt some passages of the Korān by heart and sometimes also the three R's. Many learned men also taught pupils in their own houses. It is all the more surprising, therefore, that the Emperor Bābar, in his interesting memoirs, says that Hindustān had no colleges. He writes:<sup>1</sup> 'The people of Hindustān have no good horses, no good flesh, no grapes or musk-melons, no good fruits, no ice or cold water, no good food or bread in their bazaars, no baths or *colleges*, no candles, no torches, not a candlestick.' It has, indeed, been pointed out that he was speaking of Upper India,<sup>2</sup> the only part known to him at the time, and, of course, of Muslim colleges, and that thus limited his statement is probably correct; but it seems evident that the fame of colleges in India could not have spread beyond its borders, and it may be, therefore, that they were not so numerous nor so flourishing as the court historians would lead us to suppose. But it has also been pointed out<sup>3</sup> that

<sup>1</sup> Talbot's *Memoirs of Bābar*, p. 190. <sup>2</sup> Mr H. Beveridge in the introduction to *Promotion of Learning in India during Muhammadan Rule*, p. xxv. <sup>3</sup> Jaffar, p. 116. ■

the statement of Bābar refers to the closing years of the Sultanate of Delhi when great deterioration had taken place in all directions.

Bābar, the first of the Mogul emperors (1526-30), was a man of great accomplishments, with a knowledge of Arabic, Persian and Turkish, and a taste for poetry; but he had barely won his kingdom in India when he died at the early age of forty-eight. His son, Humāyūn (1530-56), was, like his father, an accomplished scholar, who gave great encouragement to learned men; but he was for a long time banished from India, when his throne was occupied by Sher Shāh (1540-45). A college was built by Humāyūn at Delhi,<sup>1</sup> and by Sher Shāh at Narnaul.<sup>2</sup> The tomb of Humāyūn also for some time had a college attached to it.<sup>3</sup>

Akbar (1556-1605) was the most brilliant of all the Mogul emperors, but it is remarkable that he is generally supposed to have been unable to read or write. This indeed has been disputed,<sup>4</sup> but whether it was so or not we cannot call him an uneducated man, and he was deeply interested in the work of spreading education and learning. Several Muslim sovereigns in India seem to have been active in founding libraries. We have already mentioned the library of thousands of volumes at Bidar,<sup>5</sup> in the Bahmani kingdom, and it was by falling from the balcony of his library that Humāyūn met his death. Akbar<sup>6</sup> was particularly zealous in building up a great library, and almost every day he had books from it read to him. He was a patron not only of Muslim learning but also of Hindu learning, and had a large number of Sanskrit and other books translated into Persian. Akbar, like other sovereigns, was a builder of

<sup>1</sup> Law, p. 133; Nadvi, p. 22. <sup>2</sup> Law, p. 137; Nadvi, p. 28. <sup>3</sup> Law, p. 134; Nadvi, p. 22; Jaffar, pp. 133ff. <sup>4</sup> Law, pp. 139-42; Jaffar, pp. 164ff. <sup>5</sup> See p.113. <sup>6</sup> For Akbar as a patron of learning, see Law, pp. 139-72; Jaffar, pp. 80ff., 169.

colleges,<sup>1</sup> not only at his new city of Fathpur Sikri, but also at Agra and other places. Colleges, it seems, were not always residential institutions, and one scholar in giving an account of himself says that he used to go twice a day, morning and evening, to a college at Delhi, although he lived two miles away.<sup>2</sup> Colleges also were erected by private individuals, and amongst others by Māham Anaga, who was Akbar's nurse.<sup>3</sup> This lady erected a college at Delhi, the ruins of which are still to be seen. Painting, music and calligraphy were encouraged by Akbar, as well as other fine arts.

Akbar, who in his later years was very tolerant in religious matters, made arrangements for Hindu youths to be educated at the *madrasahs* as well as Muslims. His great finance minister was a Hindu named Todar Mal. Todar Mal ordered all official accounts to be kept in Persian, and this regulation, by compelling many Hindus to study that language, helped the growth and development of Urdu also, and its acceptance as the *lingua franca* of a great part of India.<sup>4</sup>

At the new city of Fathpur Sikri, Akbar erected a hall called the Ibādat Khāna, where discussions were frequently held in his presence. Not only were the representatives of various religions invited to put forward the claims of their respective faiths, but many other debates were held on religious, philosophical, scientific, and historical questions. A matter which was discussed at one of these debates led to Akbar making a strange experiment which is not without interest to educationists.

It is said that one day it was being debated as to what was the first language of mankind. The Muslims declared

<sup>1</sup> N.G.V.I. p. 31. <sup>2</sup> Elliot, *History of India as told by its own Historians*, i. i. p. 176. <sup>3</sup> N.G.V.I. p. 22; Jaffar, p. 134. <sup>4</sup> Grierson, *Literature of Hindustān*, p. 35.

that it was Arabic, the Jews said it was Hebrew, while the Brāhmans maintained that it was Sanskrit. Akbar wished to discover the truth of this matter, and so he ordered twelve new-born infants to be secured and brought up in strict seclusion by dumb nurses. Not a word was to be spoken in their hearing till they had reached twelve years of age. When the time arrived the children were brought before the royal presence, and experts in the various learned tongues were present to catch the first words which fell from the lips of the children, and to decide to which language it belonged. As might have been expected, they could not utter a word, but communicated with each other only by signs. The children were afterwards taught to speak, but with the greatest possible difficulty. This is the story as it is related by Father Catrou,<sup>1</sup> who based his history of the Mogul dynasty on the memories of the Italian Manucci, who was for forty-eight years physician to the Mogul emperors. Badauni, the Muslim historian, who was unfriendly to Akbar, gives a slightly different version of the story,<sup>2</sup> which is simpler and perhaps nearer the truth. He says that several suckling infants were kept in a secluded place far from habitations, where they were not to hear a word spoken. Well-disciplined nurses were placed with them, who were to refrain from giving any instruction in speaking, so as to test the accuracy of the tradition which says that every one that is born is born with an inclination to religion, by ascertaining what religion and sect these infants would incline to, and, above all, what creed they would repeat. Badauni also says that about twenty infants were thus segregated, and that after three or four years some had died, but the others were all dumb. The experiment may, indeed, appear a somewhat foolish one, and

<sup>1</sup> Banerjee's translation p. 117. <sup>2</sup> J. Talboys Wheeler, *History of India*, iv, p. 174; Elliot, ii, p. 228.

not without a shade of cruelty, but educationists may perhaps envy Akbar the power of carrying out a psychological investigation of this kind, and wish he had used his opportunity for conducting experiments which would have been more useful.

Akbar's interest in, and care for, education is shown by a most remarkable passage in the *Ain-i-Akbari* (or institutes of Akbar). This work, which was composed by Abul Fazl, Akbar's personal friend and minister, contains a most interesting account of his administration. The following passage refers to education:<sup>1</sup>

'In every country, but especially in Hindustān, boys are kept for years at school where they learn the consonants and vowels. A great portion of the life of the students is wasted by making them read many books. His majesty orders that every schoolboy should first learn to write the letters of the alphabet and also learn to trace their several forms. He ought to learn the shape and name of each letter, which may be done in two days, when the boy should proceed to write the joined letters. They may be practised for a week, after which the boy should learn some prose and poetry by heart, and then commit to memory some verses to the praise of God, or moral sentences, each written separately. Care is to be taken that he learns to understand everything himself, but the teacher may assist him a little. He then ought for some time to be daily practised in writing a hemistich or a verse, and will soon acquire a current hand. The teacher ought specially to look after five things, knowledge of the letters; meanings of words; the hemistich; the verse; the former lesson. If this method of teaching be adopted a boy will learn in a month, or even in a day, what it took others years to understand,

<sup>1</sup> Blochmann's translation, p. 278; see also Gladwin's translation, i., p. 223; Nadvi, pp. 117ff.; Jaffar, pp. 86ff.

so much so that people will get quite astonished. Every boy ought to read books on morals, arithmetic, the notation peculiar to arithmetic, agriculture, mensuration, geometry, astronomy, physiognomy, household matters, the rules of government, medicine, logic, the tabī'i, riyāzī, and ilāhī sciences,<sup>1</sup> and history; all of which may be gradually acquired. In studying Sanskrit students ought to learn the Bayākaran, Niyāī, Bedānta, and Patanjali. No one should be allowed to neglect those things which the present time requires. These regulations shed a new light on schools, and cast a bright lustre over *madrasahs*.<sup>2</sup>

This most interesting statement illustrates Akbar's great concern for education. It seems intended to bring about certain reforms in the schools, but the exact nature of those reforms is difficult to understand in the absence of information as to the state of affairs which it was intended to replace. Like many other reformers Akbar seems to have thought that too much time was spent in learning the mechanical arts of reading and writing, and he was probably trying to overcome the difficulties which the Persian character presents to the beginner. He seems to be recommending in the first place, a quicker method of teaching these subjects. In the chapter on popular education it will be shown how in Hindu schools writing was taught before reading, and by the pupil running his pen over letters traced by the master, whereas in the Muslim Persian schools reading was taught before writing. Is it not possible that Akbar was impressed by the more rapid progress made in Hindu schools, in learning reading and

<sup>1</sup> The tabī'i, riyāzī, and ilāhī sciences are the means of the threefold divisions of sciences. Ilāhī, or divine, sciences comprise everything connected with theology, and the means of acquiring a knowledge of God. Riyāzī sciences treat of quantity, and comprise mathematics, astronomy, music, and mechanics. Tabī'i sciences comprehend physical sciences.

writing, and wished to introduce these methods into Muslim schools also? His broad tolerance and interest in Hindus as well as Muslims make this not unlikely. With regard to his regulations for learning by heart, it is, again, not clear what reform is intended. It may be that he wished to reduce the time spent on this also, and make it more intelligent by insisting on the pupils understanding what they were learning, and writing out what they learnt. It is noteworthy that among the five things which the teacher is urged specially to look after are the meanings of words and the revision of the former lesson. Akbar evidently intended whatever was done to be done thoroughly. The injunction that 'care is to be taken that he (the pupil) learns to understand everything himself, but the teacher may assist him a little', sounds almost like a quotation from a modern textbook on education. While, however, we must be careful not to read too much into this or any other statement of this document we can say at least that it shows that Akbar saw the need of intelligent co-operation on the part of the pupil in the work of education, and that true progress can only be made when the pupil is learning to think out his own problems. The curriculum which is put forward as suitable for 'every boy' must evidently be intended for the *madrasah* rather than for the primary schools. Even so it is a very wide one. It is to be noticed that in the earlier portion of the document Akbar laments the fact that a great portion of the life of students is wasted by making them read 'many books', and yet he here recommends the study of a very large number of subjects. But the two things are not inconsistent. The former statement evidently refers to the reading of many books without understanding them, or of books which his majesty would not consider of much practical use, as, for example, the vapid *belles lettres* in Persian. He

seems, in fact, to be taking the line so often taken by practical men of affairs, and to deprecate mere book-learning as contrasted with the acquisition of practical knowledge. The curriculum which he lays down contains a preponderance of scientific subjects, but these were, no doubt, those usually taught in the *madrasah*. We can, however, hardly suppose that any one *madrasah* taught them all, or that many students could get a thorough grasp of such a wide range of subjects. The order of subjects in Akbar's scheme seems to give a preference to those which were of practical utility, which suits the character of Akbar, who was himself an inventor and encouraged the mechanical arts. It is to be noted, however, that the subject of morals heads the list, and theology was also included. The short reference at the end of the document to Hindu education shows Akbar's interest in that also. It apparently only records what was the usual practice in teaching Sanskrit students, and the emperor would hardly have ventured to work out reforms for the Brāhmanic education; but the injunction that 'no one should be allowed to neglect those things which the present time requires' may be taken as a suggestion that the practical side of education should not be neglected.

These regulations certainly bring out in a very favourable light not only Akbar's interest in and care for the education of his people, but also his attempt to make that education efficient. It is possible that Abul Fazal or other ministers of Akbar may have had a hand in framing such regulations, but it is probable that Akbar himself also had some part in the matter, for they suit the practical bent of his character. The question may well be asked as to how far these regulations were carried into practical effect and what was their result. There was no such thing as an education department, nor were there inspectors of schools in those days,

and even supposing this document to have been circulated to all local officials and to all schools it is not unlikely that it may have, to a large extent, remained a dead letter, except by way of suggestion to the more enterprising teachers.

No doubt in schools which came under the personal notice of the emperor or of any officials as interested as he was, and as anxious for reform, there may have been some notice taken of it, but it is hardly likely that the conservative traditions of the schools would have been altered very easily.

Akbar's son and successor, Jahāngīr<sup>1</sup> (1605-27), was in many ways a less able sovereign than his father. He was not, however, without some predilections for learning, and he wrote, with the assistance of others, his own memoirs. He was a lover of books and paintings, and gave great encouragement to artists. Some of these he employed to illustrate his own memoirs. Agra was at this time still a great centre of learning, and the exponents of various religious faiths are said to have come to live in the city to set forth their respective creeds. In the matter of building colleges Jahāngīr was active, and it is recorded that he repaired some colleges which for thirty years had been desolate and inhabited only by birds and beasts. Jahāngīr not only repaired them, but supplied them again with teachers and pupils. He made a law that, when any wealthy man died without leaving an heir, his property was to escheat to the crown and be used for the repair of colleges, monasteries, and other religious buildings. Shāh Jahān's reign<sup>2</sup> (1627-58) is especially famous for the erection of many fine buildings, but does not seem to be marked by any remarkable educational progress. He did not, however,

<sup>1</sup> Law, pp. 173-80; Nadvi, p. 30; Jaffar, pp. 92ff. <sup>2</sup> Law, pp. 180-6; Jaffar, pp. 95ff.

reverse the policy of his predecessors in the encouragement of learning, and like them also he was a patron of music and painting and the fine arts. A college was founded at Delhi in this reign close by the great mosque of the city, and another college in Delhi was repaired and re-established. Shāh Jahān's son, Prince Dārā Shukoh, was a great scholar, with a strong leaning towards Hindu philosophy. He translated many Sanskrit works into Persian, among others the *Upanishads*.

The French traveller, Bernier, visited India during the reign of Shāh Jahān, and it is remarkable that he draws a most unsatisfactory picture of the state of education in India. He says:<sup>1</sup>

'A profound and universal ignorance is the natural consequence of such a state of society as I have endeavoured to describe. Is it possible to establish in Hindustān academies and colleges properly endowed? Where shall we seek for founders? Or, should they be found, where are the scholars? Where are the individuals whose property is sufficient to support their children at colleges? Or if such individuals exist who would venture to display so clear a proof of wealth? Lastly, if any person should be tempted to commit this great imprudence, yet where are the benefices, the employments, the offices of trust and dignity, that require ability and science, and are calculated to excite the emulation and the hopes of the young student?'

When one thinks of the record of the founding of numerous colleges during the reign of the Mogul emperors, to say nothing of those that were founded by earlier Muslim sovereigns, and also of the zeal for, and interest in education shown by sovereigns, like Firūz Shāh and Akbar, and of the mention also of the educational institutions started by many private patrons, it is difficult to imagine how such

<sup>1</sup>Bernier's *Travels* (Constable's translation), p. 229; Jaffar, pp. 97, 98.

a melancholy view of the state of education could have been taken by this seventeenth-century traveller. It is interesting to compare his view with that taken by the Emperor Bābar in his memoirs. Like many other visitors from the West, Bernier no doubt judged the state of affairs in India too much by European standards, and relied too much on casual observation for the formation of his opinion. But he could hardly have written such a paragraph if education had been as widespread in India as we might be tempted to suppose by the numerous references to the building of colleges. An interesting sidelight is thrown on the situation by the frequent mention of the repair of colleges which had fallen into disuse and bad repair. Thus Jahāngīr is said to have repaired and re-established no less than thirty of such colleges which had become so ruined as to be inhabited by birds and beasts, while Shāh Jahān did the same for a college in the royal city of Delhi and this was subsequent to the reign of Akbar when education was so highly favoured and encouraged. It certainly looks as though some colleges were quickly deserted by tutors and scholars when the pious founder died or his interest languished. They migrated in many cases to a newer institution which offered better conditions. And it may be that in the latter part of his statement, where Bernier laments the lack of suitable employments and positions for young men who have studied, he is reflecting the opinion of some with whom he came into contact who may have given as their reason for not pursuing higher studies the lack of certainty in obtaining suitable employment when their course was completed. Brāhmaṇ education, carried on largely in secluded places and without any royal provisions for its support, save the encouragement given by princes like Akbar and Dārā Shukoh, probably escaped his notice. While, therefore, we must discount a

great deal the unfavourable opinion of Bernier, it will help us, on the other hand, not to over-estimate the progress of education in India even under the best of the Mogul emperors.

It was part of the policy of Aurangzib<sup>1</sup> (1658-1707), who was a strict and orthodox Muslim to give great encouragement to Muslim education. He was hard indeed on the Hindus, and in 1669 ordered the destruction of temples and the prohibition of Hindu teaching and worship at Benares and other places. He also once confiscated the buildings belonging to the Dutch in Lucknow and made them over to a Muslim for use as a college. Towards Muslim education, however, Aurangzib showed great favour. In the *Mirāt-i-Ālam*<sup>2</sup> we read: 'All the mosques in the empire are repaired at the public expense. *Imāms*, criers to the daily prayers, and readers of the *khutba*, have been appointed to each of them, so that a large sum of money has been and is still laid out in these disbursements. In all the cities and towns of this extensive country, pensions and allowances and lands have been given to learned men and professors, and stipends have been fixed for scholars according to their abilities and qualifications.' Besides these stipends for professors and students Aurangzib founded a large number of colleges and schools. He sent orders to the provinces of Gujarat and other places that all Muslim students were to be given pecuniary help. He also took steps<sup>3</sup> to have the Bohras of Gujarat educated, and for this purpose teachers were appointed and monthly examinations were to be held, the results of which were to be reported to the emperor. Colleges<sup>4</sup> were also erected in this reign by private individuals, and at this time Sialkot, which began to be a place of learning about the time of

<sup>1</sup> Law, pp. 187-93; Jaffar, p. 138. <sup>2</sup> Elliot, vii, p. 159. <sup>3</sup> Nadvi, p. 78.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid., p. 26.

Akbar, came into prominence as an educational centre. Aurangzib added to the Imperial Library many Muslim theological works. Though narrow in his literary and theological outlook he was not without learning, and he not only knew his mother tongue of Turkish, but could read and write Arabic and Persian with great facility. He had learnt the Korān by heart and also the Hādis, or traditions, and was well versed in Muslim theology.

We learn that it was the practice with young princes when they reached the age of four years four months and four days, to perform the '*maktab ceremony*'. The child was seated in the school-house and formally handed over to tutors for his instruction to commence. We read of this ceremony being performed in the case of Humāyūn, and it is also said to have taken place in the case of Akbar, although there is a doubt about his literacy. This custom seems also to have become common amongst other Muslim boys and is still in use.<sup>1</sup> The princes were first taught to read and write their mother tongue. With regard to their education Catrou, following Manucci, says:<sup>2</sup> 'Whilst the princes remain in the harem, under the eye of their father, a eunuch is charged with their education. They are taught to read and sometimes to write in Arabic and in Persian. Their bodies are formed to military exercises, and they are instructed in the principles of equity. They are taught to decide rationally upon subjects of dispute which occur, or on supposititious suits at law. Finally they are instructed in the Muslim religion, and in the interests of the nation, which they may be called one day to govern.'

There is an incident in the life of Aurangzib which throws a valuable sidelight on the education of the young Muslim princes, and also gives to us that monarch's views upon

<sup>1</sup> In the Panjab the '*maktab ceremony*' is called '*bismi'llah*'.

<sup>2</sup> Catrou, p. 288.

the subject. It is related to us by the French traveller Bernier, who got a report of the incident from one who was present.<sup>1</sup>

Aurangzīb's old tutor, Mulla Shāh, hearing of his pupil's success in gaining the throne, went to visit him, expecting reward and advancement. For three months Aurangzīb refused to see him, and when at last he saw him he spoke as follows: 'Pray, what is your pleasure with me, Mullaji? Do you pretend that I ought to exalt you to the first honours of the state? Let us examine your title to any mark of distinction. Show me a well-educated youth and I will say that it is doubtful who has the stronger claim to his gratitude, his father or his tutor. But what was the knowledge I derived under your tuition? You taught us that the whole of Franguistan (Europe) was no more than some inconsiderable island, of which the most powerful monarch was formerly the king of Portugal, then he of Holland, and afterwards the king of England. In regard to the other sovereigns of Franguistan, such as the king of France and him of Andalusia, you told me that they resembled our petty *rājas*, and that the potentates of Hindustān eclipsed the glory of all other kings; that they alone were Humāyūns Ākbars, Jahāngirs or Shāh Jahāns; the Happy, the Great, the Conquerors of the world and the Kings of the world;<sup>2</sup> and that Persia, Uzbec, Kashgar, Tartary, and Cathay, Pegu, Siam, China, trembled at the names of the kings of the Indies. Admirable geographer! Deeply read historian! Was it not incumbent upon my preceptor to make me acquainted with the distinguishing features of every nation of the earth; its resources and strength; its mode of warfare, its manners, religion, form of government, and wherein its interests principally consist; and by a regular course of

<sup>1</sup> Bernier's *Travels*, pp. 155ff.; Jaffar, pp. 175ff. <sup>2</sup> These are the meanings of the names of these sovereigns.

historical reading to render me familiar with the origin of states, their progress and decline; the events, accidents, or errors, owing to which such great changes and mighty revolutions have been effected? Far from having imparted to me a profound and comprehensive knowledge of the history of mankind, scarcely did I learn from you the names of my ancestors, the renowned founders of this empire. You kept me in total ignorance of their lives, of the events which preceded, and the extraordinary talents, that enabled them to achieve their extensive conquests. A familiarity with the languages of surrounding nations may be indispensable in a king; but you would teach me to read and write Arabic, doubtless conceiving that you placed me under an everlasting obligation for sacrificing so large a portion of time to the study of a language wherein no one can hope to become proficient without ten or twelve years of close application. Forgetting how many important subjects ought to be embraced in the education of a prince, you acted as if it were chiefly necessary that he should possess great skill in grammar, and such knowledge as belongs to a doctor of law; and thus did you waste the precious hours of my youth in the dry, unprofitable, and never ending task of learning words.' Bernier goes on to say that some of the learned men, either wishing to flatter the monarch and add energy to his speech, or actuated by jealousy of the *mulla*, affirm that the king's reproof did not end here, but that when he had spoken for a short time on other subjects, he continued his speech as follows:

'Were you not aware that it is during the period of infancy, when the memory is commonly so retentive, that the mind may receive a thousand wise precepts; and be easily furnished with such valuable instructions as will elevate it with lofty conceptions, and render the individual capable

of glorious deeds? Can we repeat our prayers, or acquire a knowledge of law and of the sciences only through the medium of Arabic? May not our devotions be offered up as acceptably, and solid information communicated as easily, in our mother tongue? You gave my father, Shāh Jahān, to understand that you instructed me in philosophy; and, indeed, I have a perfect remembrance of your having, during several years, harassed my brain with idle and foolish propositions, the solution of which yields no satisfaction to the mind, propositions which seldom enter into the business of life; wild and extravagant reveries conceived with great labour and forgotten as soon as conceived; whose only effect is to fatigue and ruin the intellect, and to render a man headstrong and insufferable. O yes, you caused me to devote the most valuable years of my life to your favourite hypotheses, or systems, and when I left you, I could boast of no greater attainment in the sciences than the use of many obscure and uncouth terms, calculated to discourage, confound, and appal a youth of the most masculine understanding; terms invented to cover the vanity and ignorance of pretenders to philosophy; of men who, like yourself, would impose the belief that they transcend others of their species in wisdom, and that their dark and ambiguous jargon conceals many profound mysteries known only to themselves. If you had taught me that philosophy which adapts the mind to reason, and will not suffer it to rest satisfied with anything short of the most solid arguments; if you had inculcated lessons which elevate the soul and fortify it against the assaults of fortune, tending to produce that enviable equanimity which is neither insolently elated by prosperity, nor basely depressed by adversity, if you had made me acquainted with the nature of men; accustomed me always to refer to first principles, and given a sublime and adequate conception

of the universe and of the order and regular motion of its parts; if such, I say, had been the nature of the philosophy imbibed under your tuition, I should be more indebted to you than Alexander was to Aristotle, and should consider it my duty to bestow a very different reward on you than Aristotle received from that prince. Answer me, sycophant, ought you not to have instructed me on one point at least, so essential to be known by a king; namely on the reciprocal duties between the sovereign and his subjects? Ought you not also to have foreseen that I might, at some future period, be compelled to contend with my brothers, sword in hand, for the crown, and for my very existence? Such, as you must well know, has been the fate of the children of almost every king of Hindustān. Did you ever instruct me in the art of war, how to besiege a town, or draw up an army in battle array? Happy for me that I consulted wiser heads than thine on these subjects! Go; withdraw to thy village. Henceforth let no person know either who thou art, or what is become of thee.'

Making all due allowance for any embellishments added consciously or unconsciously by Bernier, his pronouncement upon the subject of education is most interesting and noteworthy. It makes very little difference whether part of it came from Aurangzib's counsellors or not, for taking it as it stands it gives the view of Muslim education held by the seventeenth-century men of affairs in India and their criticism of its defects. Aurangzib's part in this pronouncement is all the more remarkable from the fact of his being an orthodox Muslim, who himself had a good knowledge of Arabic and delighted to read and study Muslim theological works. He was not a broad-minded student of human nature like Akbar whose philosophic outlook was a species of eclecticism. But narrow as were Aurangzib's views on some questions, he

was a shrewd and able ruler, and saw the need of a more satisfactory education than he himself had received. He was not objecting to the theological basis of his education, but to the pedantry and formalism which characterized it. He objects to the mere learning of words and terms without the power to understand or use them, and which had no vital connexion with the world outside the school. The study of Arabic must have become as formal as the study of the classics had become in the schools of seventeenth-century Europe, and Aurangzib objects to the wasting of so much time in obtaining mere skill in grammar. We have seen how Akbar seems to have placed a great emphasis on the teaching of scientific subjects. Aurangzib appears to be pleading for a broad humanism in which history, geography, and the languages of the surrounding nations would have a large place. The formation of high ideals, and of such habits of thought and action as would enable the pupil to meet all the difficulties of life with wisdom and courage are also set forth as necessary to a good education. The desirability of connecting the education given with the vocation to be followed by the pupil in after-life is another educational aim which Aurangzib proposes. All this has the appearance of being very modern, and it is of the highest interest to find these two monarchs, Akbar and Aurangzib, who are amongst the greatest rulers of India, and who were in so many ways different from each other in character and outlook on life, each advocating some of those very reforms in education which are being called for loudly at the present time. The only pity is that neither of them seems to have gone very far in giving practical effect to the educational ideals which they set forth.

After the death of Aurangzib the glory of the Mogul empire began rapidly to wane, and the efforts made by

emperors or private individuals to erect and endow educational institutions became much more rare. There is a record of two or three *madrasahs* having been founded at Delhi during the reign of Aurangzib's successor, Bahādur Shāh<sup>1</sup> (1707-12). One of these buildings erected by Ghāzi-ud-dīn, an officer of Aurangzib, is still in existence, though no longer used as a college. It is typical of many such buildings, having in the same enclosure the college, a mosque, and the tomb of the founder.<sup>2</sup> It was closed in 1793 for want of funds. The invasion of Nādir Shāh, which took place in 1739 and resulted in the sack of Delhi, must have been a great setback to educational progress. Among other things the Imperial Library, which had been built up by the interest of many sovereigns, was carried away by Nādir Shāh to Persia.<sup>3</sup>

It is very difficult to estimate the extent of Muslim education in India in early times. As we have seen, the Emperor Bābar, and at a late date the traveller Bernier, give a very unfavourable view of the extent of education in India. These opinions cannot be accepted without considerable qualification, for we have, on the other hand, the record of the building of numerous *madrasahs* and of the existence of important educational centres, at places like Delhi, Agra, and Jaunpur. The Muslim population was, no doubt, in many places largely a town population as it is today, though in Bengal, the Panjab, Bihār, and Sind, as well as elsewhere, there is also a large population of Muslims engaged in agriculture in the villages, and it was in the cities of importance that *madrasahs* are said to have been established. We have no idea as to the average number of students attending a college. Probably this varied considerably from just a few pupils with one teacher,

<sup>1</sup> Law, p. 194; Jaffar, p. 140. <sup>2</sup> Fanshawe's *Delhi Past and Present*, p. 64; Nadvi, p. 23. <sup>3</sup> Law, p. 198.

to a large number with many teachers in the more important places. Probably most mosques had attached to them, if not a *madrasah*, then a *maktab* or primary school. All Muslim boys were supposed to attend a *maktab* in order that they might at least learn the portions of the Korān required for the Muslim daily devotions, but we cannot be sure that they always did so. The content of the education given in the *maktab*s must have been very different in different places. When the Muslim boy begins to speak he should be taught to repeat the Muslim article of belief (the *kalima*). After that certain prescribed verses from the Korān have to be learnt by heart. At about seven years of age he begins to learn the Korān, and receives instruction in religious precepts and usages. This seems to be the minimum education given in a *maktab*. In some cases, however, reading and writing were also taught and some elementary arithmetic. To this might be added legends of prophets and anecdotes of Muslim saints, and perhaps some selections from poets. The teaching of Persian must have begun some time during Muslim rule, and Persian schools became widespread, as this language was required by those who wished for employment in government service. These schools are referred to again later in the chapter on popular education. With regard to modern survivals of Korān schools in India the *Quinquennial Review of Education*<sup>1</sup> quotes Mr de la Fosse as saying that these 'are usually attached to a mosque. . . . the scholars commence by studying the Arabic alphabet, and as soon as they can read are made to recite *suras*, or chapters of the Korān. Neither writing nor arithmetic is taught. So far as my experience goes instruction is usually confined to reading and memorizing but sometimes an attempt is also

<sup>1</sup> *Quinquennial Review of Education in India*, 1907-1912, p. 272.

made to explain the meaning of what is read. This, however, is rare.'

The content of the education given in the *madrasahs* must also have varied in different places. Probably not every school taught all the subjects, and pupils selected such as they wished to study. Adam, in his report on education in Bengal (1835-38), says with regard to the *madrasahs*:<sup>1</sup> 'In the Arabic schools the course of study takes a much wider range. The grammatical works are numerous, systematized, and profound; complete courses of reading on rhetoric, logic, and law are embraced; the external observances and fundamental doctrines of Islām, and Ptolemy on astronomy in translation, are not unknown; other branches of natural philosophy are taught; and the whole course is crowned by the perusal of treatises on metaphysics, deemed the highest attainment of the instructed scholar.' It is interesting to compare this list of subjects with those which formed the curriculum of the universities of Europe in the Middle Ages. We find a very close correspondence between them. The 'Seven Liberal Arts' all appear except dialectic and music. Dialectic was probably largely covered by rhetoric. Music did not have the same connexion with religious services as in Christian Europe, and therefore was not of such importance from the religious point of view. That it was cultivated we know from the encouragement given to it by Akbar and other sovereigns, though Aurangzib could not tolerate it. Theology and law, which were studies in mediaeval European universities, appear in this list, but not medicine. Medicine was, however, studied, and even at the present time Muslim *hakims*, or physicians learned in the ancient medical lore, practise in India and Pakistan. Medicine appears in Akbar's list of

<sup>1</sup>Adam's Reports, p. 215.

of studies. Law was more closely connected with theology than in Europe, for in Islām it is based on the Korān and the Traditions, whereas in Europe it was non-Christian Roman law that was the basis of studies. We know that at a certain period in the Middle Ages Muslim learning in the West was full of intellectual vigour, and in many ways was the means of stimulating thought and mental activity amongst students in Europe. But the zenith of its influence was passed before it became widespread in India, and it is perhaps for this reason amongst others that it never attained to such an excellence and fame in India as in more western lands. The criticisms of Aurangzib, as well as the statement of Adam, seem to show that Muslim learning in India, like the mediaeval learning of Europe, had become formal and scholastic, with a strong emphasis on grammar, and having as its climax the discussion of dry abstract and metaphysical trivialities. That it often included more than this, as did the mediaeval education of Europe, we may be quite sure. Science of some kind was studied, and literature and history were also taught. History was, in fact, a very favourite subject amongst the Muslims of India, and the large number of historical works written by Muslim writers is in striking contrast with the paucity of Hindu historical literature. The critical and impartial spirit which modern scientific historians seek to cultivate is indeed lacking, nor could we really expect to find it in those days. We shall not be very far wrong if we say that the state of Muslim learning in India was very much the same as that of learning in Europe before the introduction of printing. In the matter of the arts and crafts there was little difference, if any, between the training of the Hindu and Muslim craftsman, and this subject has been dealt with in the chapter on vocational education. In method also there was probably not much essential difference.

between Hindu and Muslim education. Rote learning was given a large place, and the principal aim of the teacher was to pass on to the pupil the learned traditions which he himself had received.

It must be remembered that Muslim education was primarily confined to that minority of the population which embraced the religion of Islām. At first this minority was very small, and it has never included more than about one fifth of the population. For centuries the Muslims were little more than an armed garrison in a foreign land, and though many inhabitants of India joined the Muslim religion the learned class of Brāhmans held firmly to their old faith. In spite of this, however, the extent and influence of the Muslim education in India was by no means inconsiderable. It has been claimed<sup>1</sup> that Muslim education helped to break down caste barriers as Muslim schools were open to all and that it promoted the cultural unity of India. Under the patronage of the Muslim rulers many Sanskrit books were translated into Persian and Arabic and many of the rulers themselves studied Sanskrit and patronized its scholars. Its fluctuating and uncertain character was very largely the result of despotic rule which indulged in sudden impulses, and afforded no certainty of the continuance of any new undertaking, as shown in the many Delhis which were built and deserted. The same happened in the case of the *madrasahs*. Moreover, the poverty of the country and the rapacity of officials stifled the popular demand for education. The *maktab* attached to the mosque was probably the most permanent of Muslim educational institutions in India, and those of them which taught Persian, a language which was required for official use, were resorted to even by Hindus who

<sup>1</sup> Jaffar, pp. 14, 15.

wished to acquire this language, and thus had an influence on a considerable proportion of the population. They formed part of that system of popular elementary education which will be described in a later chapter.

## CHAPTER VIII

### CENTRES OF LEARNING

#### *Hindu Centres*

*Takshaśilā.*<sup>1</sup> The most important centre of learning in ancient India was Takshaśilā or Taxilā. There is no record to show how it came into prominence in this respect. It was the capital of the province of Gandhāra and that may have been the reason why many scholars gathered together there. By the seventh century B.C. in any case it was attracting scholars from many parts of India, and in the days of Alexander the Great it was famous for its philosophers even amongst the Greeks.

The town of Takshaśilā passed through many vicissitudes, having several times been captured and destroyed by invaders. It was occupied by the Persians in the sixth century B.C., by the Indo-Baktrians in the second century B.C., by the Scythians in the first century B.C. and by the Kushānas in the first century A.D. It was more than once destroyed during these upheavals and afterwards rebuilt on another site. These changes must have had their effect upon the university. Not only would its activities be suspended during these stormy periods, but a change of ruler would mean the introduction of new influences. During the Persian occupation the national Brāhmī script was replaced for Sanskrit by Kharoshti. The time, extending to a century and a half, when the Indo-Baktrians were the rulers, brought Greek influences and probably the study of Greek and Greek literature. At all events from the romantic history of Apollonius of Tyana by Philostratus it is clear that in the first century A.D. Indians and Greeks at Takshaśilā knew each other's philosophy.

<sup>1</sup> S.K. Das, pp. 307-14; A.S. Altekar, pp. 248-55.

Among the ruins of Takshaśilā no large halls or lecture halls have been discovered, and it is evident that it was a place where teachers of reputation gathered their own pupils round them. It is from the Jātakas that we learn most about Takshaśilā as an educational centre.

It is probable that Pāṇini, the famous Sanskrit grammarian, was a student of Takshaśilā. In spite of the often dangerous and difficult travelling of those days students flocked to Takshaśilā from many far off cities. They often began their studies about the age of sixteen or seventeen and continued for about eight years. In the early days at least, caste had not become vigorous and the choice of subjects was not restricted by caste considerations. We read for example of a Brāhmaṇ priest of Benares who sent his son to Takshaśilā to learn archery which would seem a more suitable subject for a man of the Kshatriya caste.

The curriculum at Takshaśilā seems to have been fairly wide in its scope. It included the study of the three *Vedas* with all the subsidiary subjects which arose out of this and the study of the *Vedānta* philosophy. It included also eighteen arts or professions (called *sippas*). Amongst these were medicine and surgery, archery and allied military arts, astronomy and astrology, accountancy and commerce, agriculture, divination, snake-charming, and magic.

Takshaśilā probably continued to flourish as an educational centre till the end of the Kushāna empire in the middle of the third century A.D. When Fā-hien visited Takshaśilā in the middle of the fifth century A.D. he found nothing of educational importance there. Its final ruin came during the Hun invasions.

*Benares*<sup>1</sup> has been a famous centre of the Hindu religion for more than two thousand years, and on that account has also been a place of education. We do not, however,

<sup>1</sup> S.K. Das, pp. 385-6; A.S. Altekar, pp. 255-60.

know much about its history as an educational centre. It did not attain in ancient times to the fame of Takshaśilā, but the many learned Brāhmans who lived there often gathered groups of pupils in their houses, and it had many famous teachers. But at Benares probably the religious side was always more prominent than the intellectual side.

*Nadiā*<sup>1</sup> or Navadvipa ('New Island') is an example of a centre of learning which though it became such in the middle ages has continued to the present day. *Nadiā* was a town founded in A.D. 1063 by one of the Sen kings of Bengal. In 1203 it was captured by the Muslims. From the earliest days the patronage of its Hindu rulers and its political importance, besides the sanctity of the site, attracted a large number of scholars who taught the Brāhmanic learning to thousands of students, and this continued even when *Nadiā* lost its political importance. Among erudite teachers who taught in *Nadiā* was Abdihodha Yogi, a pandit who is said to have founded there the first school of logic; a subject for which *Nadiā* has since been specially famous. Bāsudev Sarbabhauma, another of its famous savants, is said, while a pupil of Pakshadhar Misra, the first logician of Mithilā, to have learnt by heart the whole of the treatise on logic. Among his distinguished pupils were Raghunāth Siromani, the author of the *Didhiti*, and the commentary on the Gautama *Sūtra*; Raghunandan Smārta Bhatāchārya, the most renowned teacher of law in Bengal, whose school is followed even to this day throughout the whole province; Krishnānanda Agambagis, whose work on Tantra philosophy is the standard book on the subject; and Gauranga or Chaitanya, the leader of a great Vaishṇava sect in the sixteenth century.

At *Nadiā* the chief study is logic, but law and grammar

<sup>1</sup> See *Nadia Gazetteer (Bengal District Gazetteers, No. 24)*, 1910, pp. 180ff.; also *Adam's Reports*, pp. 49ff.

are also taught. Dialectical discussions are frequently held, and the ambition of the student is to gain success at one of these discussions held at a festival, and by adroit and hair-splitting arguments to silence his opponent. Professor Cowell, who visited the schools at Nadiā in 1867, says,<sup>1</sup> 'I could not help looking at these unpretending lecture halls with a deep interest, as I thought of the pandits lecturing there to generation after generation of eager inquisitive minds. Seated on the floor with his "corona" of listening pupils round him, the teacher expatiates on these refinements of infinitesimal logic which make a European's brain dizzy to think of, but whose labyrinth a trained Nadiā student will thread with unfaltering precision. I noticed during my visit middle-aged and even grey-haired men among the students.'

The classes at Nadia were held in *tols*. Each *tol* consisted of a thatched chamber, in which the pandit and his class met, and a collection of mud huts round a quadrangle in which the students lived in the simplest manner. The number of students in a *tol* was usually about twenty five. The number of *tols* and of students at Nadiā seems to have varied considerably from time to time.

### *Colleges attached to Hindu Temples<sup>2</sup>*

From inscriptions and other ancient records it is known that in old times colleges were often attached to temples.

*Salogti*, in the Bijāpur district, was a famous centre of learning in the tenth and eleventh centuries A.D. The college was probably one for study of the *Vedas* and was attached to the temple of *Trayi-Purusha*. It seems to have had several spacious halls for the students.

*Ennāyiram*, in the South Arcot district, was flourishing

<sup>1</sup> Quoted in *Nadia Gazetteer*, p. 182. <sup>2</sup> S.K. Das, pp. 325ff.

at the beginning of the eleventh century A.D. Regular salaries were provided for thirteen teachers. The subjects taught included grammar, the four *Vedas*, and the *Mīmāṃsā* and *Vedānta* philosophies.

*Tirumukudal* flourished as an educational centre about the same time as *Ennāyiram* but was a smaller institution. Besides the college there were also connected with the temple a hostel and a hospital. It was situated in the Chingleput district.

*Tiruvorriyur* was also in the Chingleput district. It flourished in the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries A.D. It was specially devoted to the study of grammar and was located in a large hall adjoining the local Śaivite temple.

*Malkapuram*, in the Guntur district, flourished about the middle of the thirteenth century A.D. It provided for eight teachers and had accommodation for about a hundred and fifty pupils. In this case also there was not only a college connected with the temple but also a hostel and a hospital.

These are only examples of many similar temple colleges which flourished in south India in the middle ages. Many old inscriptions in south India record grants for educational purposes and down to the eighteenth century every religious centre in that area seems to have maintained some kind of school for the teaching of Sanskrit.

It is probable that in north India there were similar educational institutions attached to the temples in old times though records of these have not been preserved.

In south India there were often Brāhmaṇ colonies in villages which had been assigned for their maintenance. These villages were called *Agrahāra* villages. The Brāhmaṇ colonies in them were usually places of education where the *Vedas* were studied as well as grammar and logic.

In the early days of Buddhism *vihāras* or *sangharāmas* were places where the Buddha stayed with groups of disciples. At first they were retreats used during the rainy season when it was difficult for mendicants to travel about. But gradually they became established centres, and in course of time came to possess more permanent buildings than the sheds which at first were erected.

The primary purpose of these monasteries was that they should be places of meditation for Buddhist monks. But some centuries after the death of Buddha, and more particularly in the second and third centuries A.D., the pursuit of secular knowledge came to be regarded as one of their chief functions, though in reality this was alien to the original ideas of Buddhism. Gradually the monasteries became transformed into educational institutions and many students resorted to them who had no thought of leaving the world and becoming monks.

*Nālanda*.<sup>1</sup> The most famous of all Buddhist places of learning in India was Nālanda. Its ruins are still to be seen at Baragaon seven miles north of Rājgir in Bihār and forty miles south-east of Patna. It was probably a religious centre in pre-Buddhist times but little is known of its early history. Nāgārjuna, about A.D. 300, and Ārya Deva, about A.D. 320, are said to have been the earliest scholars to take interest in Nālanda as an educational institution. But when Fā-hien visited Nālanda in A.D. 410 it was only an unimportant place, though shortly afterwards it rose into importance. It was greatly helped by the patronage of the Gupta kings although they themselves were orthodox, though not intolerant, Hindus. When Hiuen Tsiang visited Nālanda it was at the height of its glory. The

<sup>1</sup> S.K. Das, pp. 357-72; A.S. Altekar, pp. 260-72; *University of Nālanda*, H.D. Sankalia.

university was located in splendid buildings and there was a fine library. The whole place was surrounded by a wall.

According to Tibetan accounts the quarter in which the Nālanda University with its grand library was located was called Dharmaganja('Piety Mart'). It consisted of three grand buildings. In one of these, which was nine-storied, the sacred scripts were kept.<sup>1</sup>

Nālanda was a stronghold of Mahāyāna Buddhism and a thorough study of all the works of this form of Buddhism was compulsory for all students. The Hinayāna form of Buddhism was also taught but chiefly in order that it might be refuted. As advanced students were expected to join in debates on different systems and philosophies, the *Vedas* and *Upanishads*, the *Sāṅkhya*, *Vaiśeṣika* and *Nyāya* philosophies and also Jainism were studied. As a preparation for the discussions much attention was given to logic. From the records of Chinese travellers it seems that there was an observatory at Nālanda and that astronomy was studied there. The study of Tantrism came in course of time to be given great prominence at Nālanda and some of its famous scholars became great exponents of the Tantric form of Buddhism. The large number of images and ruined buildings show that much attention must have been given to sculpture and architecture.

Nālanda had many famous teachers. Some of these wrote encyclopaedic works dealing with various forms of Buddhism, philosophy, logic, and grammar. Amongst the many famous teachers may be mentioned Dinnaga who lived about the fifth century A.D. and wrote works on logic, Sthiramati who flourished at the end of the fifth and the beginning of the sixth century and translated many Sanskrit books into Tibetan, Dharmapāla in the early years of the

<sup>1</sup> *Medieval School of Indian Logic*, Appendix A.

seventh century who wrote treatises on etymology, logic and metaphysics, and Sāntarakṣita who visited Tibet and died there in A.D. 762.

Students often spent as many as twelve years studying at Nālanda. At the beginning great attention was given to grammar which was a necessary foundation of subsequent studies. Afterwards came composition in prose and verse, logic and metaphysics. The relation between pupils and their teachers in the matter of discipline and service was similar to that in Hindu institutions. Instruction was largely individual but public discussions of abstruse points were given much prominence. At first students would listen, but the attainment of proficiency was judged by ability in debate. A good deal of time was spent in copying manuscripts, otherwise there was not much written work. Students who had not been brought up at Nālanda and who came from elsewhere seeking admission were subjected to a severe oral examination by the 'gatekeepers'. The examination consisted of a few questions, but ability to pass required an extensive and deep knowledge of Indian philosophy and a large number of applicants were unsuccessful. Games were prohibited to the students but apparently sometimes took place, and from frequent prohibitions it seems that gambling was rather common.

From the reports of the Chinese visitors it appears that the numbers sometimes rose as high as from three to five thousand.

The aim and purpose of the education at Nālanda had little connexion with practical needs. Many who distinguished themselves there would find it opened out the way to employment in royal service, while others sought only to achieve distinction in the Buddhist order. But no doubt the training received encouraged an intellectual outlook and brought students into contact with much of Indian culture.

At one time Nālanda had an international reputation and attracted students not only from all over India but from China, Korea, and Japan and Ceylon. Its influence was also felt in Java and Sumatra.

The Nālanda monastery was destroyed along with other similar places by the Muslim invader Bakhtiyār Khilji about the year 1200. An attempt to revive it was unsuccessful. Long before that Buddhism in India had become degenerate and had passed from its early ideals. Śāṅkarāchārya had already centuries before this by his great ability done much to re-establish Hinduism.

The fame of Nālanda outshone that of other Buddhist centres of learning in India but a few other places may also be mentioned.

*Valabhī*<sup>1</sup> (Walā) in Kāthiawār rose into prominence as a place of learning about the same time as Nālanda. It also enjoyed the patronage of rulers. We do not know so much about it as we do about Nālanda but at one time it seems to have been not very much inferior to it. It was visited by the Chinese traveller I-Tsing. In opposition to Nālanda it championed the Hinayāna form of Buddhism.

*Vikramaśila*.<sup>2</sup> This place was situated in Magadha on the banks of the Ganges not very far away from Nālanda, though the identification of the site is uncertain. It is said to have included a hundred and seven temples and six colleges. It was founded by King Dharmapāla at the close of the eighth century and continued until it was destroyed about the same time as Nālanda. King Dharmapāla endowed his foundation with rich grants which were to be used for the maintenance of resident monks as well as non-resident monks and pilgrims. A learned and pious

<sup>1</sup> Univ. of Nālanda, H. D. Sankalia, pp. 179ff.; A. S. Altekar, pp. 272-5. <sup>2</sup> S. K. Das, pp. 372-81; A. S. Altekar, pp. 275-9; University of Nālanda, H. D. Sankalia, pp. 180ff.

sage was always appointed as head of the monastery. The subjects taught were similar to those taught at Nālanda, including grammar, metaphysics and logic, and ritualistic books. It also, like Nālanda, was connected with the Mahāyāna form of Buddhism, but became more closely allied to Tantrism. Pandits who were eminent for learning and character were rewarded by having their images painted on the walls of the university, and the title of *pandit* was conferred on distinguished scholars by the king himself. Six of the most learned of the sages of this foundation were appointed to guard its gates, which means amongst other things that they examined the fitness of those who sought admission to the university. Among its famous teachers was Diparikara, who is also known as Atiśa. He was born in A.D. 980 and died in Tibet in 1053. He was learned in many subjects and wrote several books on Tantrism.

*Odantapuri*<sup>1</sup> (or Uddandapura) and *Jagaddala* were other Buddhist centres of learning in India but little is known about them and their sites have not been identified with certainty. The former was founded by a certain Gopāla, who was king of Bengal and had extended his power westwards over Magadha or South Bihār. It dates from about the middle of the eighth century A.D.

Huien Tsiang mentions several other Buddhist monasteries where he stayed during his travels in India in which much teaching was given and in some of which he himself spent much time in study.

#### Muslim Centres

In most towns where the Muslim power was established a *madrasah*, or college, was founded. Some places had

<sup>1</sup> S.K. Das, pp. 381-3; *University of Nālanda*, H.D. Sankalia, p. 189.

more than one or even many. These towns included places like Delhi, Agra, Lahore, Allahabad, Ajmere, Patna, Hyderabad, Ahmadābād, and many others. Colleges were also established in some villages, such for instance as Sahāli<sup>1</sup> and Balgrām<sup>2</sup> not far from Lucknow. Gopamāu and Khairābād in Oudh were at one time famous as places of learning.<sup>3</sup>

These colleges no doubt varied in their status and fame not only from place to place but from time to time. Much depended upon the ability and reputation of the *maulvīs* who were teaching there.

The place in India which was most famous in its day as a Muslim place of learning was *Jaunpur*.<sup>4</sup> It was compared to Shirāz in Persia and called the Shirāz of India. It came into prominence during the reign of Ibrāhim Sharki (1402-40), and although Sikandar Lodi destroyed its colleges when he conquered Jaunpur, it regained its position as an educational centre. Scholars from far and near came to study here, and amongst the students was one at least, Sher Shāh,<sup>5</sup> who afterwards became the paramount Muslim sovereign of India. Having quarrelled with his father who was ruling in Bengal, he went to Jaunpur, and when his father wrote demanding his return, he replied that Jaunpur was a better place of education than Sasarām. The subjects which he studied were history, poetry, and philosophy, and he learnt by heart the Persian poems of Sa'di. He also learnt Arabic. In the time of Ibrāhim Sharki it is said that Jaunpur contained hundreds of colleges and mosques, and up to the time of Emperor Shāh Jahān (1627-58) it was still in a flourishing condition. Afterwards it declined in influence,

<sup>1</sup> S.K. Das, pp. 381-3; *University of Nālanda*, H.D. Sankalia, p. 189  
<sup>2</sup> Nadvi, pp. 36 and 38. <sup>3</sup> Jaffar p. 17. <sup>4</sup> Nadvi, pp. 40-2; Law, pp. 91-113. <sup>5</sup> Law, p. 138; Nadvi, p. 40.

though it still continued as a place of learning well into the eighteenth century.

In the Muslim colleges for advanced learning there were recognized grades of teachers<sup>1</sup> and India had during the period of the Muslim power, when Muslim education was at its zenith, many famous teachers.

Specialization<sup>2</sup> was frequent and certain places were famous as centres for special subjects, for example the Panjab for astronomy and mathematics, Delhi for the traditions of Islam, Rāmpur for logic and medicine, and Lucknow for theology. The higher teaching was carried on in Arabic which was for Islām what Sanskrit was for Hinduism.

Amongst the many Muslim colleges which rose into prominence from time to time it is difficult to make a selection for special description. But as an example of such we may mention Bidar<sup>3</sup> in the Bahmani kingdom. The college there was founded by a private patron named Mahmūd Gāwān who lived in the latter part of the fifteenth century. He was a writer, author and mathematician. His great wealth enabled him to give liberal benefactions for the advancement of learning. His college at Bidar was housed in a splendid building which he erected. It took about three years to build and cost a very large sum of money. The building enclosed a spacious square and was two storeys high. At each corner of the front side was a minaret of a hundred feet in height and the front was decorated with coloured enamel tiles. Even in its present ruined state it has been described as one of the best of the ancient buildings, of India. When Aurangzib captured Bidar the building was occupied by his troops, and one part was used as a powder magazine. An accidental

<sup>1</sup> Nadvi, p. 104. <sup>2</sup> Ibid., p. 104. <sup>3</sup> Jaffar, pp. 121-6.

explosion unfortunately ruined a great part of the magnificent edifice. Attached to the college was a mosque, around which was a row of rooms for the residence of teachers and students. The college had a large library, which, according to Ferishta, contained three thousand volumes. Mahmūd Gāwān tried to obtain teachers from Persia but was unsuccessful. He appointed a certain Shaikh Ibrāhīm Multani as head of the institution. Many of the princes of the Bahmani kingdom were at one time his pupils, and he was afterwards appointed as the chief Qāzī of the kingdom. The fame of the college at Bīdar did not continue for a very long period.

## CHAPTER IX

### POPULAR ELEMENTARY EDUCATION

WE have already seen how from the earliest times we can trace the presence of an extensive educational system in India. For both Hindus and Muslims this was connected closely with religion. Hindu education was in the hands of the Brāhmans and mainly intended for them, though the other higher castes were not excluded. Muslim education centred round the mosque and was supervised by the *maulvis*. Certain classes of the community also had their own special forms of education.

Side by side, however, with these systems there grew up at some time and in most parts of India a popular system of elementary education which was open generally to all comers. It must have arisen to supply a popular demand for instruction in reading, writing and arithmetic, and was made use of chiefly by the trading and agricultural classes.

At the renewal of the charter of the East India Company in 1813 a lakh of rupees was ordered to be set apart every year for the promotion of literature and education. This led to the various local governments of India making inquiries as to indigenous education. The result of those inquiries has been that we have a valuable record of education in India as it existed before Western influences had seriously affected it, and before those modern developments took place which had such a far-reaching influence upon India. The inquiry for the Madras Presidency was carried out in 1822-26; that for Bombay in 1823-28. It is, however, the report of William Adam, who was appointed by Lord William Bentinck to carry out the inquiry in Bengal Presidency, that is the most full of interest. It was published in 1835-38, and throws

most valuable light on the state of education in India at that time. In order to get an intensive rather than merely an extensive view of the situation, Adam did not attempt to survey the whole province, but rather to choose typical districts in various parts of the presidency and make a thorough examination into the existing state of affairs. Besides the Hindu *tols* and Muslim *madrasahs*, which were places of higher learning there were found Hindu *pāthśālas* and Muslim *maktab*s.

The *pāthśālas* existed in all the larger villages as well as in the towns. The teacher and scholars numbering usually about a dozen or twenty met in the early morning under a tree in the village or in the shade of a veranda. Sometimes a temple, shed or other building might be set apart for their use. The teachers were mostly Kayasths (the writer caste).<sup>1</sup> The teaching of reading, writing, and accounts was considered a proper occupation for that caste, whereas Brāhmans, Vaiśyas, and Kshatriyas were supposed to degrade themselves by such an occupation. There were, however, some Brāhman teachers, and many other castes were represented amongst the teachers, even those of the lowest castes. In Burdwān Adam found two teachers who were lepers.<sup>2</sup> There were no regular fees, but the teachers received presents averaging about Rs 4 or Rs 5 a month.<sup>3</sup> They often eked out their income by farming or trade.<sup>4</sup> Among the scholars also there were a very large number of castes represented,<sup>5</sup> including some of those considered 'untouchable' by the higher castes. Brāhmans and Kayasths predominated. The age of the scholars was from about five or six to sixteen. The aim of the schools was strictly utilitarian, and Adam laments the neglect of moral instruction.<sup>6</sup> The curriculum included

<sup>1</sup> Adam's Reports, p. 158. <sup>2</sup> Ibid., p. 168. <sup>3</sup> Ibid., p. 160. <sup>4</sup> Ibid., p. 168.  
<sup>5</sup> Ibid., p. 160. <sup>6</sup> Ibid., p. 101.

reading, writing, the composition of letters and elementary arithmetic and accounts, either commercial or agricultural or both. Very few textbooks were in use, and those that were used were often most unsuitable, such as a reading-book containing an account of the amours of the god Krishna with his cowherd mistress Rādhā.<sup>1</sup> There were four stages of instruction. In the first period the scholar was taught to form letters on the ground with a small stick. This period usually lasted about ten days. In the next period the master traced letters on a palm leaf with an iron style. The scholar then traced over the letters with a reed pen and charcoal ink, which easily rubs out. This process was repeated over and over on the same leaf till the scholar no longer needed a copy to guide him. Then he practised on another leaf. He was afterwards exercised in writing and pronouncing the compound consonants, which in most Indian languages are modified when written together. Then practice was given in the combination of vowels and consonants, and this led on to the common names of persons. In the third period the palm leaf was replaced by the larger plantain leaf. The scholar now began to learn the composition of the simplest forms of letters. He was taught the connexion of words in sentences and to distinguish literary from colloquial forms of speech. The rules of arithmetic now began with addition and subtraction. But multiplication and division were not taught as separate rules. These were effected by addition and subtraction, aided by multiplication tables which extended to twenty. The multiplication table was repeated aloud by the whole school once every morning. After this the pupil began to learn commercial or agricultural accounts or both. When the scholar reached the fourth period he

<sup>1</sup> Adam's Reports, pp. 98ff.

received more advanced instruction in accounts and began the composition of business letters, petitions, grants, and similar productions. Paper now began to be used for writing, and after this had been used for about a year the scholars were considered as qualified to engage in the unassisted perusal of Bengali works like the *Rāmāyaṇa* and *Manasa Mangal*.

It is to be noted that in learning, writing came before reading. Except for the united repetition of multiplication tables and exercise of that kind, the instruction was individual and monitors were commonly chosen from among the more advanced scholars to help those at a more elementary stage of instruction. Dr Andrew Bell got his idea of the monitorial system from what he had seen in indigenous schools in India. An account given by William Ward in his *View of the Hindoos* presents us with a similar picture of these indigenous schools in Bengal.<sup>1</sup> 'Almost all the larger villages in Bengal contain common schools, where a boy learns his letters by writing them, never by pronouncing the alphabet as in Europe. He first writes them on the ground; next with an iron style or a reed on a palm leaf; and next on a green plantain leaf. After the simple letters he writes the compounds, then the names of men, villages, animals, etc., and then the figures. While employed in writing on leaves all the scholars stand up twice a day with a monitor at their head and repeat the numerical tables ascending from a unit to four, and from four to twenty, from twenty to eighty, and from eighty to 1,280; and during school hours they write on the palm leaf the strokes by which these numbers are defined. They next commit to memory an addition table and count from one to a hundred; and after this, on green plantain leaves, they write easy sums in addition and subtraction.

<sup>1</sup> Ward, vol. i, pp. 160ff.

of money; multiplication and then reduction of money, measures, etc. The measures are all reducible to the weight, beginning with *rattōis* and ending with manas (maunds). The elder boys, as the last course at these schools, learn to write common letters, agreements, etc. The Hindu schools begin early in the morning and continue till nine or ten o'clock; after taking some refreshment at home the scholars return about three and continue till dark. Masters punish with cane or rod, or a truant is compelled to stand on one leg holding up a brick in each hand or to have his arms stretched out till completely tired. Masters are generally respectable Śūdras, but occasionally Brāhmans.'

In the Report of the Education Commission of 1882 there is an account of an indigenous primary school in the Bombay Presidency which belongs, of course, to a later date but gives a similar picture.<sup>1</sup> 'The ordinary daily routine of a Hindu indigenous school is nearly the same in all parts of the Presidency. Each morning at about six o'clock the Pantoji, who is in some cases a Brāhmaṇ, and the priest of many of the families whose children attend the school, goes round the village and collects his pupils. This process usually occupies some time. At one house the pupil has to be persuaded to come to school; at another the parents have some special instructions to give the master regarding the refractoriness of their son; at a third he is asked to administer chastisement on the spot. As soon as he has collected a sufficient number of his pupils he takes them to school. For the first half-hour a *Bhūpāli*, or invocation to the sun, Saraswati, Ganapati, or some other deity, is chanted by the whole school. After this the boys who can write trace the letters of their *kittas*, or copy slips with a dry pen, the object of this exercise

<sup>1</sup> *Bombay Report*, p. 65.

being to give free play to the fingers and wrist, and to accustom them to the sweep of the letters. When the tracing lesson is over, the boys begin to write copies; and the youngest children, who have been hitherto merely looking on, are taken in hand either by the master's son, or by one of the older pupils. The master himself generally confines his attention to one or two of the oldest pupils, and to those whose instruction he has stipulated to finish within a given time. All the pupils are seated in one small room or veranda, and the confusion of sounds, which arises from three or four sets of boys reading and shouting out their tables all at the same moment, almost baffles description.'

In the Madras Presidency these schools<sup>1</sup> are known as *pyal* schools. The *pyal* is a kind of a bench or platform about three feet high and three feet broad which is built against the wall of most houses in south India, and has in front a raised pavement or *koradu*. On the *pyal* visitors are received, the family sleeps in the hot season, and it has also many other uses. For the village school a *pyal* is usually lent by the headman of the village. The scholars sit on the *pyal* leaving the *koradu* for the teacher and for their own passage. The main purpose of these *pyal* schools, before modern developments in education reformed them or pushed them out, was to give instruction in the three R's, but of arithmetic only the simplest elements were taught. A great deal of time was spent in construing and memorizing beautiful but obscure poems, written in the 'high' dialect (which differs not only from the colloquial, but even from the modern literary dialect). The average number of children was about twenty-one, and the school had no apparatus except the sandy ground, certain small

<sup>1</sup> See article in *Indian Antiquary* for February 1873, p. 52, by C.E. Gover, from which this account is taken.

blackboards, and some *kajan* leaves for writing. A sort of discipline was maintained by a constant and often severe use of the cane. Unruly or truant boys were coerced by punishment that partook of torture. The teacher was usually a Brāhmaṇ. When a new scholar was to be received in the school the teachers and the scholars came to his house and he was handed over to the teacher by his parents. Various religious and other ceremonies were performed, and amongst other things the master made the new pupil repeat the whole alphabet three times, taught him a prayer to Ganeśa, and guided his hand in writing in a flat vessel of rice the name of Vishnu or Śiva. The pay of the teacher might be as much as Rs 15 to Rs 25 a month in the case of pupils whose parents were wealthy; but in *pyal* schools for poorer boys his emoluments only amounted to Rs 5 to Rs 10 a month. The pay of the teacher was received not only by regular monthly fees, but by certain customary presents on festivals and other occasions. Besides learning the three R's, a pupil obtained a knowledge, though generally a very unintelligent one, of about four or five of the great classics of the Tamil or the Telugu language. These books also being the moral code of the people, had value from the point of view of moral training. Some of these books, which had been printed in cheap editions, were in the hands of the scholars, but very often only the teacher possessed the books. Writing was taught in close connexion with reading, and the pupil began his writing lessons when he commenced the alphabet. The alphabet was learned by writing with the finger on the sandy ground. Later he began to write with a pencil on a kind of small blackboard or slate (called a *palaka*), the surface of which was prepared from rice and charcoal. Then he had the privilege eventually of writing either with an iron style on *kajan* leaves, or with a reed pen on paper. Trading

or agricultural accounts were taught as well as the composition of notes-of-hand, leases, agreements etc.; and the reading of the vernacular current hand. Education began usually at the age of five years. School commenced at about six o'clock in the morning. In the afternoon of each school day the pupil copied the next day's lesson on his *palaka*, and showed it to the master, who corrected it and heard him read it two or three times. The pupil then took it home and learnt it by heart for repetition to the teacher next morning.

Thus in various parts of India we find that there were existing popular elementary schools having the same general features though differing in some details.

It is interesting to compare with the above accounts a picture given to us of a school in south India by a traveller, Pietra della Valle, who visited India in 1623.<sup>1</sup>

'In the meantime, while the burthens were getting in order, I entertained myself in the porch of the Temple, beholding little boys learning arithmetic after a strange manner, which I will here relate. They were four, and having all taken the same lesson from the master, in order to get that same by heart and repeat likewise their former lessons and not forget them, one of them singing musically with a certain continued tone (which hath the force of making deep impression in the memory) recited part of the lesson; as for example, "One by itself makes one", and whilst he was thus speaking he wrote down the same number not with any kind of pen, nor on paper, but (not to spend paper in vain) with his finger on the ground, the pavement being for that purpose strew'd all over with very fine sand; after the first had writ what he sung, all the rest sung and writ down the same thing together. Then the first boy sung and writ down another part of the lesson;

<sup>1</sup> *Travels of P. della Valle* (Hakluyt Society), ii, 227.

as, for example, "Two by itself makes two", which all the rest repeated in the same manner, and so forward in order. When the pavement was full of figures they put them out with the hand, and if need were, strew'd it with new sand from a little heap which they had before them wherewith to write further. And thus they did as long as the exercise continu'd in which manner likewise, they told me, they learned to read and write without spoiling paper, pens, or ink, which certainly is a pretty way.'

This widespread elementary education existed side by side with the Sanskrit schools, and there was no mutual dependence and connexion between them. The former existed for the trading and commercial classes, and the latter for the religious and the learned. In the case of Muslim education, however, we find that there was a close connexion between the Arabic schools of higher learning or *madrasahs* and the Persian schools or *maktab*s. The latter corresponded to the Hindu vernacular schools. Urdu was the current language amongst the Muslims but this vernacular was not used as the medium of instruction. Urdu is written with Persian characters, and contains a large number of Persian words, but was considered as a patois unfit to be used as a language in the schools. Its place was taken by Persian, which had been made the court language by the Muslim Emperors, and continued to be used as such till 1835. A knowledge of Persian was therefore necessary to obtain an appointment in government service, and the Persian schools were attended by Hindus as well as Muslims, especially by Hindus of the Brāhman and Kayasth castes. Most of the teachers were Muslims and Adam considered that as a class they were superior to the Bengali and Hindu teachers.<sup>1</sup> They were, however, more dependent for their support on individual

<sup>1</sup> Adam's Reports, p. 215.

patrons or single families. A few of them were also Arabic teachers, and possessed high qualifications. Their emoluments, as a rule, amounted to Rs 5 to Rs 7 a month. The subjects studied included elementary grammatical works and forms of correspondence, and popular poems and tales were read. Occasionally a work on rhetoric or a treatise on medicine or theology was studied. The *Gulistān* of Sa'dī was a very favourite textbook. Sections of the Korān were learned by heart, and the schools had a more religious connexion than the Hindu vernacular schools, but Adam did not consider them morally superior to the Hindu schools.<sup>1</sup> The Hindu schools were vernacular and commercial; but the Muslim schools were also to some extent literary and philological, and employed a learned language. Printed works were not used, but manuscripts were in constant use. In contra-distinction to the Hindu vernacular schools, reading was taught before writing. Elegant penmanship was much cultivated. Adam also found some schools in which elementary Arabic was taught, but these existed merely to give the boys that knowledge of certain portions of the Korān which is necessary for Muslims. They taught mere names and forms and sounds, and it was considered sufficient for the boys to be able to repeat the required portions without understanding them.<sup>2</sup> Some of the teachers did not pretend to be able even to sign their names. There were also a few schools in which both Persian and Bengali were taught.

Besides the instruction in the schools there were also a certain number of children receiving instruction at home. William Ward says,<sup>3</sup> ‘Hindu women are unable to teach their children their first lessons, but a father may frequently be seen teaching his child to write the alphabet when five

<sup>1</sup> Adam's Reports, p. 102. <sup>2</sup> See also p. 133 above, where the report of Mr. de la Fosse on modern Korān schools is quoted. <sup>3</sup> Ward, i, p. 160.

years old.' Rich men often employed a tutor to teach their children, and when other children were admitted to share in this instruction it sometimes grew into a school. Girls, as a rule, received no education; but daughters of Rājput nobles or of *zemindārs* often received a limited education from their fathers or family priests.

There was, then, before the British Government took over control of education in India, a widespread, popular, indigenous system. It was not confined to one or two provinces, but was found in various parts of India, though some districts were more advanced than others. In the inquiry made for the Madras Presidency in 1822-6, it was calculated that rather less than one-sixth of the boys of school-going age received education of some sort.<sup>1</sup> In the similar inquiry made for the Bombay Presidency (1823-8) the number of boys under instruction was put down as about one in eight.<sup>2</sup> In one of the districts in Bengal, where Adam carried out this inquiry, he found<sup>3</sup> 13.2 per cent. of the whole male population receiving instruction. In another district he found 9 per cent of all children of school-going age under instruction. William Ward says<sup>4</sup> that it was supposed that about one-fifth of the male population of Bengal could read. In some parts of India the number under instruction would probably be less than in the three provinces mentioned. Widespread, therefore, as elementary education was, it did not include a very large proportion even of the male population, and amongst females of course it hardly existed at all.

An important question which arises with regard to this system of popular elementary education is, 'When did it begin?' We have seen that it was in full swing at the

<sup>1</sup> See *Madras Report for Ed. Com.*, 1882. <sup>2</sup> F. W. Thomas, *Hist. and Prospects of Brit. Ed. in India*, ch. i. <sup>3</sup> Adam, pp. 117, 232.

<sup>4</sup> Ward, ii, p. 503.

beginning of the nineteenth century when investigations were carried out by the governments of Bengal, Bombay and Madras in various parts of India. But how far back can it be traced?

The Brāhmaṇ authorities, like the *Sūtras* and the Code of Manu, have no reference to any form of literary education outside of the Brāhmaṇical schools. But silence in works of this kind is not certain evidence that facilities for primary education did not exist, and the Brāhmaṇs may have had reasons for wishing to ignore any forms of education which were not in their own hands. The duties of Vaiśyas, as outlined in Manu, included as we have noticed<sup>1</sup> such things as a knowledge of measures and weights, of probable profit and loss on merchandise, of the languages of men, of the manner of keeping goods, and the rules of purchase and sale. Part of this knowledge at least was probably learnt in the course of business, being passed from father to son, but it is quite conceivable that even in very early times some merchants or others may have employed a teacher, or founded a small school, for the instruction of their sons in the elements of these subjects.<sup>2</sup> There is, at any rate, evidence to show that the knowledge of reading and writing was fairly widespread in India long before the time of Manu.

Writing was introduced into India about 800 B.C., and the elaboration to the Brāhmaṇī script was completed by about 500 B.C. or even earlier.<sup>3</sup> A Buddhist tract called the *Silas*, which dates from about 450 B.C.,<sup>4</sup> gives a list of children's games. One of these is called *Akkharikā* (Lettering) which is explained as 'Guessing at letters traced in the air or on a playfellow's back'. Such a game among

<sup>1</sup> See p. 61. <sup>2</sup> For present-day Mahājani schools, see p. 62. <sup>3</sup> J. G. Bühler, *Indian Palaeography*, p. 17. <sup>4</sup> Rhys Davids, *Buddhist India*, p. 108.

children seems to show that the knowledge of the alphabet was prevalent at least among a certain section of the community, perhaps those who belonged to the trading and commercial classes, for it is they who would have the greatest need for a knowledge of reading and writing and neither the Brāhmaṇa nor the Buddhist sacred books seem to have been committed to writing till a later time. The ancient writers Nearchus and Q. Curtius, in the last quarter of the fourth century B.C., refer to the custom of the Indians of writing letters on cloth and bark; and Megasthenes, at a slightly later date, speaks of the use of milestones to indicate distances and halting-places on the high-roads.<sup>1</sup> In another passage, however, Megasthenes relates that judicial cases in India were decided according to unwritten laws, and the Indians knew no letters. Taking these passages together it seems that at that time writing was used for public or private notifications, but that it had not begun to be used for the purpose of literature. It is then probable that the knowledge and use of writing, though widespread, was confined to the commercial and official classes, but this does not necessarily imply the existence of schools for teaching these arts.

In the *Mahāvagga* there is an interesting passage which is translated as follows:

'At that time there was in Rājagaha a company of seventeen boys, friends of each other; young Upāli was first among them. Now Upāli's father and mother thought: "How will Upāli after our death live a life of ease and without pain? If Upāli could learn writing (*lekhā*) he would after our death live a life of ease and without pain." But then Upāli's father and mother thought again: "If Upāli learns writing his fingers will become sore. But if Upāli could learn arithmetic (*gāṇanā*) he would after

<sup>1</sup> J. G. Bühler, *Indian Palaeography*, p. 6. <sup>2</sup> *Mahāvagga*, i. 49.

our death live a life of ease and without pain." But then Upāli's father and mother thought again: "If Upāli learns arithmetic, his breast will become diseased. But if Upāli could learn money-changing (*rūpa*), he would after our death live a life of ease and comfort and without pain." But then Upāli's father and mother said to themselves: "If Upāli learns money-changing, his eyes will suffer". The result was that it was decided that Upāli should become a monk and join the *sangha*, and he and his companions were all admitted, but on account of their unruly conduct it was laid down that persons under twenty should not in future receive the full, or *upasampada*, ordination.

This passage seems to show that at the time when the *Mahāvagga* was composed it was not uncommon for some boys at least to learn writing and arithmetic, and that there were some facilities for this, and that these were outside the monasteries. It does not seem likely that at this time monasteries had begun to be schools of popular instruction, and it is indeed probable that at first the only teaching given to those who joined the *sangha* was a knowledge of the precepts and doctrines of Buddhism. This passage bears witness to the existence of elementary schools of some sort, and it is remarkable that the three subjects of the curriculum mentioned bear a striking resemblance to those of the indigenous primary schools of India in later times namely *lekhā* (writing),<sup>1</sup> *gaṇanā*, (arithmetic) and *rūpa* (literally 'forms', but meaning arithmetic applied to simple commercial or agricultural purposes). According to the Elephant Cave inscription of the year 165 of the Mauryan era (about 157 or 148 B.C.), King Khāravela of Kalinga learnt these subjects in his childhood.<sup>2</sup> The *Lalita Vistara*<sup>3</sup> refers to the learning of writing and of the alphabet by

<sup>1</sup> J. G. Bühler, *Indian Palaeography*, p. 5. <sup>2</sup> J. G. Bühler, *Indian Palaeography*, p. 5. <sup>3</sup> Ch. x.

children. *Jātaka*, No. 125, mentions the wooden writing board (*palaka*) known (as well as the *varṇaka*, or wooden pen) also to the *Lalita Vistara*, and still used in elementary schools.<sup>1</sup> There is a *Sutta* in Pāli which is called the *Sigalovāda Sutta*<sup>2</sup> which enumerates the chief duties which men owe to one another in everyday life. Amongst the duties which are mentioned for parents are training their children in virtue and having them taught arts and sciences. It also contains a section which details the duties of pupils and teachers. The pupil should honour his teachers by rising in their presence, by ministering to them, by obeying them, by supplying their wants, by attention to instruction. The teacher should show his affection to his pupils by training them in all that is good, by teaching them to hold knowledge fast, by instruction in science and lore, by speaking well of them to their friends and companions, by guarding them from danger. The mention among the duties of parents of having their children taught arts or science need imply no more than passing on to them the knowledge of their own particular craft or trade; but the mention of the duties of pupils and teachers in a manual relating to everyday life certainly seems to point to the existence of schools of some sort, though we cannot say that this implies the carrying on of secular instruction at the Buddhist monasteries. It seems rather to imply the existence of some facilities for popular instruction outside the monasteries, though not necessarily widespread.

The oldest known inscriptions in India are those of King Aśoka, who reigned from 272 to 231 B.C. This monarch had erected in various parts of India edicts and inscriptions on rocks and pillars, many of which have been discovered. His chief object was to promote amongst

<sup>1</sup> Bühlér, op. cit., p. 5. <sup>2</sup> Quoted in *Buddhism* (1890), by T. W. Rhys Davids. Translated in *Contemp. Rev.*, February 1876, by Childers.

his people *Dharma*, or moral duty. These inscriptions are in the vernacular. Aśoka also erected many monasteries. The existence of these edicts in the vernacular has been taken to imply that there was a widespread popular education going on in India at the time of Aśoka. Thus Mr. V.A. Smith says<sup>1</sup> that the care taken to publish the imperial edicts implies that a knowledge of reading and writing was widely diffused, and that there is the same inference from the inscriptions being in the vernacular. He says also that it is probable that learning was fostered by the numerous monasteries and that boys and girls in hundreds of villages learned their lessons from the monks and nuns, as they do now in Burma, and that it is likely that the percentage of literacy amongst the Buddhist population in Aśoka's time was higher than it is now in many parts of India. The vernacular inscriptions of Aśoka certainly seem to imply that there was a considerable amount of literacy, but what proportion of the population could read and write it seems quite impossible to conjecture. Even if only a few possessed these accomplishments it might have seemed quite worthwhile to Aśoka to erect his monuments and have inscriptions put on them, for the few could read them to the many. But it is very doubtful whether the Buddhist monasteries had become as early as this centres of a widespread popular instruction, and it is not certain that they ever became such in India. There is, however, evidence, as we have seen above, that before the time of Aśoka facilities of some kind existed for giving elementary instruction, and the welding together of a large part of India into one empire, under the strong rule of the Mauryan sovereign, must have given increased opportunities for trade and commerce, and this may have also led to an increased demand for

<sup>1</sup> *Aśoka*. p. 138.

popular schools where the three R's could be learnt.

Buddhism placed both religion and education on a more popular basis than Brāhmanism and by breaking down the monopoly of higher learning which had been in the hands of the Brāhmaṇ teachers, it may have also indirectly helped to increase the desire for primary education amongst the people. There was, moreover, about the first century of our era a most remarkable layman's movement in India. This is illustrated by the production of the *Bhagavad Gīta*, which belongs to about that period, in which the possibility of the attainment of salvation by an earnest layman who does his duty is expounded, and also by the growth of the Mahāyāna form of Buddhism which holds out hopes of spiritual progress to those who are not able to forsake the world and become monks. This upheaval, both in Vaishnāvism and in Buddhism, is the evidence of a widespread movement amongst laymen in India, and it would be not unlikely that it would be also characterized by a growing desire for education. It is, perhaps, from this period that the Buddhist monasteries began to undertake secular as well as religious education, and there may also have been a large growth of popular elementary schools.

The effect of the Muslim domination upon these Hindu vernacular schools must have been considerable. The growth of a large Muslim population, who resorted to the Muslim *maktab*s for obtaining an elementary education, must have lessened their numbers, and the use of Persian as the official language by the Muslim rulers made even Hindus resort to Muslim teachers in order to obtain a knowledge of this language, and with it the possibility of obtaining government employment. These Persian elementary schools must then have become numerous during the Muslim period and the

reference in the *Āīn-i-Akbarī* quoted above<sup>1</sup> shows that they were widespread at the time of Akbar. This extract does not refer to Hindu vernacular schools, although it mentions the Hindu Sanskrit education. But such schools no doubt continued and would be used by the Hindu trading and agricultural classes. The school which Pietra della Valle saw<sup>2</sup> in south India in 1623, being held in a temple porch, was evidently a Hindu vernacular school. Adam in his report mentions<sup>3</sup> that one of the textbooks used in the Hindu vernacular schools was Subhankar's rhyming arithmetic rules, which he says was evidently composed during the existence of the Muslim power, as it was full of Persian terms and references to Muslim usages. This shows how even the Hindu vernacular schools had to accommodate themselves to some extent to the altered circumstances which were brought about by the Muslim rule. It is claimed by some that the Muslim schools did a great deal in the way of spreading education amongst the common people, and that under Muslim rule popular education was largely catered for.

When the Education Commission of 1882 was conducting its investigations the witnesses were asked whether in their respective districts there existed an indigenous system of primary schools, and if so whether they were relics of an ancient village system. The replies given by witnesses in all provinces of India show great diversity of opinion. Some witnesses confidently affirmed that the primary schools were relics of an ancient village system while others as confidently denied it. The evidence on which these opinions were based was not asked for, and very few of the witnesses attempted to support their opinions by any form of proof. The diversity of opinion

<sup>1</sup> See pp. 118f. <sup>2</sup> See p. 158. <sup>3</sup> *Adam's Report*, p. 97.

can, however, be explained by the ambiguity of the question. The antiquity of this popular system, and its being a relic of an ancient village system, are really two distinct questions and even the matter of antiquity largely depends on whether the system as a whole or separate schools are considered. The evidence seems to show that these schools were started in various places under various circumstances. There seems no reason to doubt, as we have already seen, that facilities for primary education existed in some places and among some classes even before the time of King Aśoka, but new schools were often springing up where they had not existed before, and sometimes a school might become defunct. The Muslim *maktab*s were in most cases closely connected with the mosque, but with regard to the Hindu vernacular schools it seems possible to trace at least four ways in which they came to be started.

(1) Some were connected with temples. The Bengal Report of the Education Commission of 1882 says:<sup>1</sup> 'Another class of educational institutions owed its origin to a different branch of the priesthood. Each village community of the Hindus had its tutelary idol with a Brāhmaṇ specially attached to its worship. Offering worship to the idols on behalf of all the different castes of the village people, this Brāhmaṇ naturally took under him in his tutorial capacity the children of all those who, as either belonging to or connected with the twice-born, felt themselves under the obligation to acquire letters. Thus originated the village *pāṭhśālas* which are still so much cherished by the people. The *pāṭhśāla* teacher subsisted on the *deottar* land of the idol, and received from his pupils free-will offerings and occasionally fees.' So in the Panjab report also it is mentioned that some schools were connected with temples, and the school seen by Pietra della Valle

<sup>1</sup> *Bengal Report*, p. 1.

was probably a temple school. That this, however, was not the only origin of such schools, even in the case of Bengal, is clear from Adam's reports. The schools were not always held in proximity to a temple, and both teachers and pupils included even the lowest castes.

(2) Other primary schools owed their origin to the enterprise of some village *zemindār* or local magnate, who was anxious to have his own children taught, and was not unwilling to allow other children from the village to study under the same teacher along with his own children, and in some cases to allow the school to meet on the veranda of his house or in some other building that belonged to him.

(3) In other cases the school was started as a commercial venture by some enterprising person, who might be of any caste, in some place where he could secure sufficient pupils to make it worth his while to do so. This would be specially the case in the towns where trade and commerce would compel many persons of all castes to desire a knowledge of the three R's.

(4) Sometimes, as in the case of the *Mahājani* schools,<sup>1</sup> a number of local traders would employ a teacher to teach their sons writing and accounts, so as to prepare them to follow their own calling. It is not unlikely that the earliest primary schools came into being in this way.

It does not then seem possible to speak of these indigenous primary schools, taken as a whole, as being the relic of an ancient village system. If they had been so we should expect to find that the teacher was in the same position as others in the village, like the carpenter, blacksmith, barber, village priest, and others, who receive fixed customary grants from the agricultural community of the village in return for the performance of their services, and pass on their rights from father to son. Not only did

<sup>1</sup> For the *Mahājani* schools, see p. 62.

the manner of paying the teacher differ, generally at least, from the way that men of other professions and trades in the village received their remuneration, but the teachers were not confined to one caste, and there is little trace of their office being hereditary. In the case of a Brāhmaṇ teacher his position in the village community was no doubt due to his priestly office, and the ancient method of rewarding his services was continued even when he undertook vernacular teaching. But in the case of teachers of other castes, if in some cases they established a similar position in a village community, it is hardly sufficient evidence in itself of the antiquity of the system. Apart from the Brāhmans there has never been a caste of teachers in India, and the teaching work of the Brāhmans was originally in connexion with the *Vedas* and the higher Sanskrit learning given only to the three 'twice-born' castes rather than the imparting of primary education to all comers. It seems likely that the village primary school was an institution of much later growth than other parts of the Indian village system.<sup>1</sup>

The character of these popular primary schools must have varied greatly in different places, and depended largely upon the efficiency and ability of the teacher. But as a whole they must have been very deficient, judged by modern standards. They were intensely narrow in their outlook and had a strictly utilitarian aim. They had no ideal of developing the higher mental life of their pupils or cultivating their aesthetic tastes. Any thought of helping the pupil to improve his character or realize the best that was in him was at most only a very secondary aim. The purpose was merely to enable the pupil to acquire sufficient mastery of reading, writing, and arithmetic, and a few

<sup>1</sup> For a different view, see Mr John Matthai, *Village Government in British India*, ch. ii.

applications of these, such as the composition of letters and business documents or the keeping of simple accounts, as would enable him to perform successfully the business of life. Subjects rather than pupils were taught. Memorizing of rules and tables was given a prominent place. Even where, as in the Persian schools, some literature was included in the curriculum, there was no real cultivation of literary taste.

Moral and religious instruction was not apparently given very much place. The Muslim *maktab*s taught the Korān but it seems to have been often little more than the memorizing of those passages necessary for the performance of Muslim devotions. The Hindu vernacular elementary schools were not connected with the ancient system of Brāhmanic education. The *Saraswati Bandana*, or salutation to the goddess of learning, was learnt by heart in some of these schools, and repeated by the whole school each day, and where the teacher was a temple priest, or other Brāhman, he may have given his pupils incidentally a certain amount of instruction in the mythology and sacred lore of the Hindus, but beyond this there does not seem to have been much attention paid to the moral and religious side of education.

The discipline, as a rule, was not satisfactory and the position of the teacher as dependent almost entirely on the fees or gifts he received from parents, or the good will of a *zemindār* or other patron, was such that he was almost bound to become subservient and lacking in independence. Indian boys are often more passive than Western ones, but by no means without the desire of playing mischief when opportunity arises. In his introduction to *Adam's Reports*, the Rev. J. Long quotes<sup>1</sup> from the *Calcutta Review* an account of some of the tricks played on teachers by Indian

<sup>1</sup> Introduction to *Adam's Reports*, pp. 10ff.

boys. Among them are the following. In preparing the teacher's hookah boys mix the tobacco with chillies and other pungent ingredients, so that when he smokes he is made to cough violently, while the whole school is convulsed with laughter. Or beneath the mat on which he sits may be strewn thorns and sharp prickles, which soon display their effect in the contortions of the crest-fallen and discomfited master. Some of the forms of punishment mentioned in the same number of the *Calcutta Review* as formerly common in Indian schools strike one as particularly brutal. The following are examples: A boy was made to bend forward with his face to the ground; a heavy stick was then placed on his back and another on his neck; and should he let either of them fall, within the prescribed period of half an hour or so, he was punished with the cane. A boy was made to hang for a few minutes with his head downwards from the branch of a neighbouring tree. A boy was put in a sack along with nettles, or a cat, or some other noisome creature and then rolled along the ground. A boy was made to measure so many cubits on the ground, by marking it along with the tip of his nose. It must be hoped that such punishments were used only on rare occasions with the most recalcitrant offenders, or that the very possibility of their being inflicted was sufficient to preserve discipline.

In spite, however, of many deficiencies and weaknesses, there were many good points about these schools which must not be overlooked. Individual rather than class teaching was the rule, and each pupil was free to develop at his own speed according to his own intellectual power. In small schools, such as they were, with pupils of varying age, this must have been a distinct advantage. The employment of monitors to help the master must have been a most valuable means not only of helping him in his work,

but of giving the more promising pupils a training in responsibility and also an opportunity for testing and practising the skill they themselves had acquired. The teachers, if somewhat narrow in their intellectual capacity, and dependent upon the good will of those who employed them, seem to have been nevertheless hardworking and conscientious, and although their aim was not very wide, it seems to have been accomplished. The schools were closely connected with life outside the school, and teaching for the most part only that 'useful knowledge' which is so highly regarded by the 'man in the street', they had no temptation to develop theories of formal discipline. If some of the methods employed in teaching were antiquated and unsatisfactory, judged by modern standards, others were fully in accordance with modern theory. In the Montessori system we find it advocated that writing should be taught before reading, and that in teaching to write the child should first be made constantly to run his fingers over grooved or sandpaper letters in order to fix the forms in the muscular memory. Both these ideas were long ago current in Indian schools. We have already had occasion to refer to this in connexion with the extract from the *Ain-i-Akbari*<sup>1</sup> and in the description of some of those primary schools in the early part of this chapter it has been shown how a boy is taught to learn his letters by writing them with a small stick on sand, and not by pronouncing them, and how he learns to write by tracing over the letters already made by the master with an iron style. It must be remembered also that these schools, though they might receive help from a local patron, had no public grant for their support. With only the shade of a tree, or a veranda, for schoolroom, with hardly any manuscripts, and practically no school apparatus except a few plantain or palm leaves or a little

<sup>1</sup> See p. 118f.

paper and a few styles for writing, with a mere pittance for their support, and with a meagre intellectual training, it must be admitted that the results achieved by the teachers of these primary schools were not altogether unworthy, and they helped through long centuries to give to India some elements of a popular education, and to prepare for that time when it should be possible for education to become more widespread among the people.

Although the Hindu primary vernacular schools were unconnected with the Brāhmanic schools of higher learning, they probably derived many of their ideas of teaching as well as their methods from those schools; but as the Brāhmanic learning tended more and more to be separated from the ordinary concerns of life, they supplied a popular want which would not otherwise have been met. And if they did not concern themselves very much with the teaching of religion, it must be remembered that there has always been in India a wide diffusion of moral truths and religious ideas by means of the allegories and fables (like those of the *Panchatantra* and the *Hitopadeśa*), and the epic poems (*Rāmāyaṇa*, etc.) which are handed down from generation to generation by means of the family and the social intercourse of the people as they gather in the evening, after the day's work is done, for gossip and song and story.



## CHAPTER X

### EDUCATION IN SOUTH INDIA

We have been so far chiefly concerned with systems of education which were prominent in north India, but in the south of India also there were schools and colleges of some kind from early days.

The Dravidian culture was in existence in ancient times. Tamil, with which Malayālam, Telugu, and Kannada are akin, is the oldest, richest, and most highly organized of the Dravidian languages. It is of high antiquity, but the exact period to which it can be traced back has not been determined. It is certainly one of the oldest of the regional languages of India. It has been claimed that Sanskrit itself shows some indebtedness to Tamil for origins of words. In the account of King Solomon<sup>1</sup> in the Hebrew Bible written long before the Christian era, amongst other articles which he imported apes and peacocks are mentioned. It is said that the words used by the Hebrew writer for these are really Tamil words.

From very early times the south of India exported such products as pepper, pearls, and precious stones, which were all highly valued in other lands. This brought wealth at least to the rulers and merchants even though the majority of the people may have been poor. A high degree of civilization was developed with a remarkable literature and there is evidence of much artistic skill. The courts of kings were ornate and they patronized literature, music, and the drama.

The two most important kingdoms of this area were the Chola kingdom and the Pāndya kingdom. The fortunes of these varied from time to time, and sometimes one and

<sup>1</sup> 1 Kings x. 22; 2 Chron. ix. 21.

sometimes the other was in the ascendant. The capital of the Pāndya Kingdom was at Madhurai. Further north was the Pallava kingdom in the dominions of which was Kānchipuram (Conjeevaram).

The whole area had a civilization of its own and a Tamil culture long before the Aryan culture with its use of Sanskrit reached it from the north.

The earliest Tamil poems, probably in praise of gods and kings, were no doubt written in unrefined dialect, but they are no longer in existence. Later a refined and conventional language for poetry was developed. An ancient Tamil grammar called the *Tolkāppiyam* was written by Tolkappiyanār. It was composed in the early centuries of the Christian era. It sets forth the rules for Tamil grammar and refers to previous treatises on this subject. It mentions also much Tamil poetry previous to that time which is no longer extant.

The treatise of Tolkappiyanār fixed the rules of grammar for the Tamil language. In the eleventh century another, called the *Virasōliyam*, and based on the *Tolkāppiyam*, was produced. It was composed by a Buddhist. But both these works have been superseded by the *Nannūl* of the thirteenth century, which is still the recognized authority. Its author was Pavanandi.

Madhurai, the Pāndya capital, was at one period a centre of Tamil literary activity. According to tradition it was the seat of a Sangam or academy. To this learned men were summoned from time to time by the ruling king to set the standard for Tamil, to regulate State patronage, and to give approval to works which, having examined, they regarded as coming up to the standard required. There seems however to be some uncertainty with regard to this tradition.

At an early period the Aryan culture from the north began to influence Tamil culture. This was brought about

by the introduction of religious ideas from that region. Hinduism assimilated religious cults of the south into its fold, but Buddhism and Jainism also spread their doctrines in this area. This involved the influence of Sanskrit on Tamil culture, and the introduction of many Sanskrit words. This was already taking place at the time when the *Tolkāppiyam* was produced.

The various sects founded their own *mathas*, or monasteries, generally in connexion with temples, and some of these became seats of learning, such as those mentioned in the chapter on centres of Learning. Studies in these were in connexion with the Hindu sacred texts in Sanskrit, or also in Pāli in the case of the Buddhist ones. Kānchipuram was at one time an outpost of Sanskrit culture. Its name is Sanskrit and not Tamil. But later on it became a centre of Tamil culture. The methods of study in these institutions were no doubt the same as those of similar institutions in the north of India.

In the prefaces to Tamil grammatical literature there are some references to the work of a teacher. These are not found in the *Tolkāppiyam*, but in the commentaries on this. Pavanandi, the author of the *Nannūl sutras* says there are six classes of pupils who may come for instruction. These are the teacher's son, the teacher's teacher's son, the king's son, the rich man's son (who is able to pay high fees), the disciple, and the willing and capable pupil who is keen on his studies. It is the last two of this group who are most likely to be satisfactory pupils.

It is evident that a high standard was expected in teaching. Verses in the *Nannūl sutras* urge thorough preparation on the part of the teacher. He should have complete mastery of his subject before he starts his lesson. He should begin at an auspicious time and at a sacred place. He should be free from fear, want, disease, and

discomfort. He should first pray to God and his teaching should be full of enthusiasm so as to encourage his pupils. He should adjust his teaching according to their receptivity.

It has been claimed that certain Tamil names or titles may throw some light on the teaching activities of old time. *Āciriyan* (Sanskrit *āchārya*) means a teacher and is often used in connexion with great religious teachers and other great men such as Śankarāchārya. But it is found with certain prefixes. One of these titles, *Pālāciriyan*, means a teacher of children. Where this was a family name it may mean that the family which bore it was specially engaged in teaching children. *Ilampālāciriyan* would then be a teacher of infants or junior children. Another name or title is *Āchān*, which means master or teacher (though generally used of a spiritual preceptor). There are also other names which may indicate that those bearing them had a special function in connexion with some branch of education. This may be reading too much into the meaning of names but the suggestion is certainly an interesting one.

From all that is written above it seems clear that there was in ancient times in south India a system of education connected with Tamil culture as distinguished from the Aryan culture which came from north India. This is emphasized by the existence in early days of Tamil grammatical works and highly developed poetry and other evidences of cultural activities. But what forms such educational systems had, how widespread they were, and what classes they influenced has not yet been ascertained. This is a subject which awaits investigations by careful Tamil scholars.

In the south-west of India there is a very large Christian community. Whereas in India as a whole Christians

number only two per cent of the population and in Pakistan even less, in Travancore and Cochin (now included in the state of Kerala) they are as many as thirty per cent or even more.

The Christian church was established in this part of India in the early centuries of the Christian era. The tradition is that Thomas, one of the twelve disciples of Christ, landed at the port of Muziris (now Cranganore) not far from Cochin in the year A.D. 52 and that he was successful in winning many converts and establishing churches, and that afterwards he was martyred at Mylapore now in the city of Madras. Much doubt has been expressed with regard to this tradition, but it is at least certain that the Christian church came to be established in what is now called Kerala in the early Christian centuries and that it has continued there ever since. The converts, to whatever class or caste they belonged, were numerous and came to have a recognized position in society, and there are still extant copper plates granting them privileges which related to social customs. Many of the community seem to have been traders, and it was perhaps on account of their value to the state as such that these privileges were granted by non-Christian rulers.

The history of this ancient church in India in the early centuries is obscure, and there are many uncertainties with regard to it. There are traditions that certain Christian groups came into the land from Syria and it is certain that for long centuries the church was in communion with the so-called Patriarch of Babylon in East Syria from whom they received bishops from time to time. The liturgy they used was in Syriac. Hence they are often called Syrian Christians. Their ability in trade and commerce made them useful to local rajas who, besides the privileges mentioned above, sometimes gave them

grants of land, and entrusted to them the collection of the revenue. A traveller in the fourteenth century found that they were in charge of the public weighing office of the Quilon customs.

A community with such qualifications must have been an educated one, but there is no record as to whether the education given was confined to their own community or shared with Hindus and Nayars. Certain customs which seem to be of long standing have come down to more recent times. Amongst these is the ceremony observed when a boy began his education. The teacher of the village school (whether Christian or Hindu) was called. He sat beside the boy with a large tray full of rice grains in front of them. A lamp was lit and the members of the family were present. The teacher took the child's forefinger and traced with it in the rice the name of the Hindu god, Ganapathi, who was believed to guide education and remove obstacles to success. It is curious that the name of a Hindu god was used. But in more modern times a Christian priest was called to perform the ceremony and the name of Jesus substituted for that of the Hindu deity. The teacher was given a present before he left. When the education began the child was taught writing in sand and on strips of palm leaf. When he began to use an iron pen after learning his letters another present would be given to his teacher and refreshments to his fellow pupils.

Boys also learned the use of weapons from eight years of age. The teacher of this military art was called a *panikkar*. In the sixteenth century all Syrian Christian men were being trained in the use of arms and were considered to be very good soldiers. When this custom began is not known.

The Syriac prayers used in the home in the morning

and evening were also taught to Christian children where there were Christian village schools. These prayers had first to be written on palm leaves and then learned by heart.

In the early centuries of the Christian era there was a widespread culture in the region of Mesopotamia where the Patriarch of Babylon had his headquarters and the Syrian church in India must have been in touch with this. A great blow was inflicted on the culture in Mesopotamia when Taimur invaded that region in 1401 and destroyed churches, monasteries and libraries. This was perhaps one of the reasons why learning seems to have been at a low ebb when the Portuguese came in contact with the Syrian church in India in the sixteenth century. But the clergy had to learn Syriac since they regarded it as the language of their church and used it in the liturgy of their services. It seems that, for a long time, an ordinand received his training by living with a priest reputed for his learning. Such an instructor was called a *malpan* (the Syriac word meaning a teacher or professor). He taught his students to read Syriac and gave them instruction in the use of the liturgy with some knowledge of the doctrine of the church. It was often the custom to ordain as deacons quite young boys, and the training they received before becoming priests seems to have been usually of rather a meagre character. Nowadays however, all branches of the Syrian church (for it is unfortunately divided) train their clergy in seminaries of a high standard and many of those preparing for the ministry are university graduates.

Whatever may have been the case in the earlier times the Syrian Christians are now a highly educated community and they have themselves been responsible for founding many schools and colleges in Kerala.

## CHAPTER XI

### SOME GENERAL CONCLUSIONS

IN the previous chapters some account has been given of the various systems of education, which have been in vogue in India and Pakistan in bygone ages. Few countries, and certainly no Western ones, have systems of education which have had such a long and continuous history with so few modifications as some of the educational systems of India. The long centuries through which they held sway show that they must have possessed elements which were of value, and that they were not unsuited to the needs of those who developed and adopted them. They produced many great men and earnest seekers after truth, and their output on the intellectual side is by no means inconsiderable. They developed many noble educational ideals, which are a valuable contribution to educational thought and practice. But the early vigour, which showed itself in the great contributions which India made to the science of grammar and mathematics and philosophy and other subjects, had long since spent itself when that momentous change began, which was brought about by the introduction of Western education and learning. The Brāhmanic educational system had become stereotyped and formal and unable to meet the needs of a progressive civilization. We have then to seek for the causes of its decay and failure and the reasons why it was unsuitable for present-day conditions in India. But we must also seek to understand what elements of permanent value it possessed and what contributions it has to make to the educational thought of the world in general and India in particular. In considering these questions we shall be most concerned with the Brāhmanic system and the education of special classes of

the Hindu community which were more or less connected with it, as this is the oldest system, and also that which has had most effect upon India as a whole. Buddhist education was an offshoot from the Brāhmanic education, and very closely connected with it in ideals and practice; while Muslim education was a foreign system which was transplanted to India, and grew up in its new soil with very little connexion with, or influence upon, the Brāhmanic system, and was, with a few exceptions, open only to that minority of the population which embraced the Muslim faith.

If education is described as a preparation for life, or for complete living, we may say that the ancient Indian educators would fully have accepted this doctrine. But it would have included preparation not only for this life, but also for a future existence. The harmonizing of these two purposes in due proportions has always been a difficult task for education. If it could be perfectly accomplished many of the problems of education would be solved. But in practice there has always been oscillation. Thus in the Middle Ages in Europe stress was laid upon preparation for the world to come, while modern European systems often tend unduly to ignore this side of education. India has had the same problem to face, and has had similar difficulties in meeting it. The young Brāhman was being prepared by the education he received for his practical duties in life as a priest and teacher of others, but the need of preparing himself for the life after death was also included in the teaching he received. The same may be said of the young Kshatriyas and Vaisyas who were required not only to fit themselves for their practical work in life, but also to study the *Vedas*, and give heed to the teaching of religion.

Owing, however, to the current philosophy which taught

the unreality of this world of time, and that the highest wisdom was to seek release from the worldly fetters which held the soul in bondage, and that the highest knowledge was to become acquainted with the method by which release could be obtained, there was a tendency to despise the practical duties of life and the preparation for them. The idea of the four stages, or *āśramas*, seem to have been formulated to try and check this tendency by inculcating the desirability of a student passing to the state of a householder before he became a forest hermit or wandering ascetic; but many passed straight from the student life to the life of complete renunciation of the world, and the *Upanishads* show us how there was a tendency amongst the more earnest to despise the ordinary learning of the schools and preparation for this life in comparison with the higher philosophic knowledge which was concerned with the life beyond. This was not confined to the Brāhmans, but Kshatriyas and others also were affected by this movement, and the two religions of Jainism and Buddhism were founded by Kshatriyas. Buddhism also, in encouraging the life of meditation and the joining of an order of monks, was, like Brāhmanic philosophy, setting forth an ideal of life which despised, or regarded as unreal, this fleeting world of time, and hence made that education which was a preparation for the practical duties of life something on a lower plane than that which was a preparation for the other world.

The underlying conception of all this philosophic thought which had such a profound influence upon Indian education was the doctrine of the transmigration of souls and of *karma*. According to this doctrine the result of all actions, good or bad, has to be reaped in this life or in a life to come, and our present life is governed by our actions in a previous life. So long as there are actions the fruits of which

have to be reaped, a man is condemned to be born and reborn in different forms of life, ascending or descending in the scale, and this weary round of existence goes on unceasingly unless a man can in some way obtain release and cut the chain of transmigration. This doctrine, in slightly different forms, is held by all the recognized philosophical schools of Hinduism, as well as by Buddhism and Jainism, and the main purpose of their philosophy was to discover the true way by which deliverance might be accomplished. In some phases of Indian philosophy the world is regarded as an illusion, or *Māyā*, and the only real existence is an impersonal Unknown, or Brāhman. We are not here concerned with the truth or otherwise of these philosophic conceptions, nor with the various ways which were set forth for the obtaining of salvation, but it must be observed that their influence upon the intellectual life of India was such as to turn intellectual effort almost entirely in one direction, and other studies were regarded as chiefly of value in preparation for, and as leading up to, these higher truths. There was thus a cramping of thought, and although there were not wanting those who gave their attention to other branches of learning, many of the most earnest and brilliant of Indian scholars spent their life in speculating upon these philosophic conceptions. The spirit of other-worldliness which thus gained a hold upon the Brāhmanic schools made them more and more out of touch with the ordinary life of the world, and helped to make them unfit to mould the Indian peoples in the paths of progress and general culture.

It is obvious, however, that if all were to forsake the world for a hermit or monastic life the bonds of society would soon be broken, and the work of the world come to a stop. It was to meet this difficulty, as we have seen, that it was prescribed that the general practice should be

for a student to become a householder before entering upon the ascetic life; but there was also another doctrine formulated, which gave comfort to those who felt themselves unable to forsake the world, by admitting that if a man performed well the duties of the station in which he was born he might progress spiritually on condition that he kept himself from attachment to the things of the world. Thus in the *Bhagavad Gita*, when the young Kshatriya warrior, Arjuna, is about to go into battle and feels some qualms with regard to engaging in a strife against relatives, Krishna, who has appeared to him in the form of a charioteer, encourages him to do his duty. He urges upon him the doctrine that in performing all social and religious duties of his caste in a spirit of indifference, and without the least regard for the direct or indirect results which may accrue from them, he may be freed from the necessity of reaping the fruit which would otherwise attach to them, and progress towards union with the Supreme.

'In works be thine office; in their fruits must it never be.  
Be not moved by the fruits of works; but let not attachment to worklessness dwell in thee.'<sup>1</sup>

'The man who casts off all desires and walks without desire, with no thought of a mine or of an I, comes into peace.'<sup>2</sup>

While this doctrine gave a high ideal of duty it did not tend towards a broad intellectual culture or encourage educational progress.

The very idea, moreover, of each man being born to perform certain functions in life according to his caste, tended to a narrowing of the purpose of education, and to its being regarded as chiefly concerned with preparing a boy to fulfil the duties of his particular occupation in life.

<sup>1</sup> *Bhagavad Gita*, ii, p. 47 (Dr Barnett's trans.).

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, ii, p. 71.

Thus while on the one hand, the underlying philosophic thought helped to produce a spirit of other-worldliness and to education being conceived as a preparation for what lay beyond this life, on the other hand it tended towards a narrow vocationalism, and those especially who were shut out from the study of the *Vedas* and the higher philosophic thought received little direct religious education, and their training was confined to the acquisition of those subjects or mechanical arts which they needed for their caste occupation. Thus for the mass of the people education came to be regarded from a narrowly utilitarian point of view, and when the popular elementary schools grew up to provide for the need of simple instruction for the commercial and agricultural classes, they also, like the caste training, were largely utilitarian in their outlook. Even the Brāhmanic schools often tended to become utilitarian, and those who attended them were often aiming at gaining just that knowledge which would enable them to earn their livelihood, either in connexion with the performance of religious rites for the people, or in the service of the state. It is not, of course, to be understood that there was no religious basis for the education of those who were not aiming at the life of absolute renunciation of the world. Far from it. The deeply religious nature of the Indian peoples has led them to surround all actions of life with religious associations, and even those who were shut out from the study of the *Vedas* had their religious rites. These indeed often were connected with the grossest idolatry and superstition, which became, however, parts of the Hindu system, and the very fact that the highest ideals were possible only for the few gave these lower forms of religion a greater opportunity to spread amongst the people.

The doctrine of transmigration and *karma* on the one

hand may have tended to set before men a high moral standard by making them feel the importance of all actions, as the fruit of these had to be reaped at some time or other; but in its more extreme form the doctrine taught that even good actions, as well as bad, were to be avoided, for the fruit of these also would have to be reaped, and so the cycle of births would have to be prolonged. Thus India came under the sway of a philosophy of pessimism which allowed little place in the universe for the action of Providence, or the working of moral purposes, and there was little to encourage men to progress or hopeful endeavour. In the early Vedic times life was more joyous and free, and this was the time when great intellectual movements began in India. But as the gloomy view of existence came to have more and more hold over Indian life and thought the sap of intellectual effort dried up and the progress of civilization was arrested. Hence the early promise of the ancient Brāhmanic education, with its many noble ideals and possibilities of development, was not fulfilled, and it was led into a more and more narrow groove, and was incapable of supplying the needs of a progressive and advancing civilization.

The philosophic conception of the doctrine of transmigration also underlay the caste system, which was justified and explained on the ground that a man was born into a particular caste according to his merits and demerits in a previous existence. The caste system indeed was not without its good points. It gave stability to society, and established guilds which preserved learning and craftsmanship. It was a system of mutual responsibility, and the richer members of the caste were expected to stand behind the poorer members in case of need. But, on the other hand, it discouraged originality and enterprise, and promoted stagnation and division. There was no possibility

for a man to pass from one caste to another, and hence on its educational side it was the narrowest form of vocational training the world has ever seen. There was no incentive for a boy to rise above a certain level, and no freedom of intercourse amongst the different occupations. In this narrow vocational system there was no idea of general culture or of study for the sake of study, nor was there the possibility of new avenues of learning being opened up. The individual was being educated not so much for his own sake as for the sake of society, and individualism had very little scope, if any, for development.

Brāhmanic education, as well as other forms of education in India, looked to the past for its ideals rather than to the future. Whatever variations or new ideals were permitted within Brāhmanism, it was always on the two conditions that the absolute authority of the *Vedas* should be recognized, and also the supremacy of the Brāhman priesthood. And so in education also it was the ideals of the past which ever governed its development. The duty of the teacher was to pass on as nearly as he himself had received it the mass of tradition which had been handed down from past ages. As this increased in bulk, and specialization became necessary, it was still the past to which the student was taught to look for guidance, and the ancient standards were regarded as authoritative. Thus in grammar, after the great work of Pānini and Patanjali the science became fixed, and though an enormous number of works on grammar have been written in India since, it was always recognized that these ancient authorities must not be departed from. Education also became stereotyped, and the same methods which were followed hundreds of years before the Christian era continued with little change down to modern times.

In criticizing the ancient Indian education one can say that it had many of the same defects that the education

of Europe had before the Revival of Learning, and like that education it needed some new breath of life to quicken it and transform it. In the case of India that new force has come from the West in the introduction of Western learning and Western ideas. India is at present passing through a period of intellectual, social, political, and religious ferment which is in many ways similar to the change through which Europe passed during the Renaissance. In no direction has the change been more apparent than in education. But as education advances it must not be assumed that educational practices and ideals which have been found useful in Western countries should be regarded as being of necessity suited to the needs of India and Pakistan today. Many of the ideals which were worked out by the educators of old times are re-asserting themselves, and in a modern form and in conjunction with many Western ideals are proving of great service to those engaged in the great task of educating the rising generation.

One of the most characteristic of Indian educational ideals is the relation between pupil and teacher. This relationship receives a great deal of attention in the ancient books, both Hindu and Buddhist. Great reverence and respect is required from the pupil, while the teacher on his part has also high responsibility. The idea of this relationship of pupil to teacher has indeed been sometimes so developed that it has led to the teacher, or *guru*, receiving divine honours from his pupil, or disciple, in some forms of Hinduism, and sects which have sprung from it. In a more sober conception of this relationship, it is thought of as that of father and son, and so far was this idea carried out that the pupil was considered to be in closer relation to the teacher than to his real father. The pupil often resided at the house of his teacher, and, even when this was not the case, was always in close contact with him. The paternal

relationship of the teacher towards the pupil was emphasized by the absence of any regular fee. The teacher having accepted the responsibility of the position was considered morally bound to perform his duty towards the pupil, and moreover in the case of the Brāhman preceptor, to teach was a duty which he owed to society. The pupil, on the other hand, was carrying out filial relationship not only in the respect he paid to the teacher, but also in attending to the service of his household. The ideal is thus a domestic one and it is quite foreign to the Indian system that there should be a large institution or a large class of pupils taught together. The Indian ideal would seem to be one teacher for each pupil, and though on practical grounds this may not often have been realized, yet so far as the evidence is available we find, as a rule, quite a small number of pupils taught by each teacher. Where there was a centre of learning corresponding to a university this seems to have been a collection of small classes grouped in one place. The same teacher, moreover, generally taught the pupil from the beginning to the end of the period of learning. In the West it is the institution rather than the teacher which is emphasized, and it is the school or college which a student regards as his *alma mater*. In India it is the teacher rather than the institution that is prominent, and the same affection and reverence which a Western student has for his *alma mater* is in India bestowed with a lifelong devotion upon the teacher. Even the introduction of Western education with its many teachers, and many classes, has not entirely broken down this ideal, in spite of the complications which it produces. To an Indian student a teacher who only appears at stated hours to teach or lecture and is not accessible at all times to answer questions and give advice on all manner of subjects is an anomaly. Such a relationship, no doubt, throws an increased responsibility

upon the teacher, and where the teacher is not worthy of his position may be attended with grave dangers. But where the teacher is a man who reaches a high intellectual, moral and spiritual standard, there is much to be said for the Indian ideal. There is no country in the world where the responsibilities and opportunities of the teacher are greater than they are in India.

Closely connected with the family relationship which exists between teacher and pupil is the employment of monitors to assist the teacher in his instruction. These fulfil the place of elder brothers of the family. The monitorial system of Bell and Lancaster, which Bell is said to have devised by seeing the method used in schools in India, is but a caricature of the Indian ideal. In English schools the prefectoral system has associated the elder boys with the masters in the government and discipline of the school, and it is generally recognized as being one of the most valuable parts of their training. According to the Indian idea the more advanced scholars are associated with the master in the work of teaching, and though the system may have been originally devised to help the master in solving the problem of teaching several pupils at a different stages at the same time, it must have been a valuable training for the monitors themselves. In India the bullying of younger boys by older ones is almost unknown, and the respect shown by the younger boys towards the older boys is very marked. The resuscitation of this ancient Indian ideal of monitors would therefore be worth a trial, and it is not unlikely that it might show very excellent results if the conditions were also fulfilled that the class should be small, and that it be composed of pupils all at different stages of progress.

An ideal of Indian life which has a close bearing on education is that which has been happily termed *naissance*

*oblige.*<sup>1</sup> The evils of the caste system are indeed manifest, and have already been referred to; but we must not overlook the fact that it has also its useful side, and from the educational point of view it has brought about a vast system of vocational training which was made possible by the fact that the boy's future career was determined from his very birth, for upon his birth depended both his duties and privileges in life. Moreover, this vocational training was permeated by the idea of the family, and was carried out under conditions which brought it into close contact with life. The decay of the caste system, with all its attendant evils, seems inevitable under the conditions of modern life. But it is to be hoped that as it passes some of its nobler phases may be preserved, and the vocational idea of education which it has fostered may not be lost. The tendency to extend a uniform system and so to reduce all education to the dead level of a code-bound type is already at work in India, and the ideal of vocational training needs to be made much more prominent.

Those who study India from the point of view of its philosophy alone may get the impression that the people of India are a race of impractical dreamers who spend much of their time in meditating on lofty abstractions. That philosophical speculation has been carried to a very high point in India is of course true, but the practical side of life has also been cultivated, and a great deal of social life has been permeated by utilitarianism. In education this is reflected in the vocational ideals to which we have referred. But the spiritual basis which underlies life is never left out of sight, and in the ultimate analysis is regarded as paramount. The great difficulty which the people of India have felt has been to preserve a unity between the spiritual and the practical point of view, and this has often led to

<sup>1</sup> See Farquhar, *Crown of Hinduism*, p. 203.

impractical other-worldliness on the one hand and narrow vocationalism on the other. But no view of life would be regarded as adequate which did not rest ultimately on a spiritual basis, and hence in education it is regarded as essential that a pupil's life should be lived in a religious environment and permeated by religious ideals. It is this which creates a very difficult problem for a government which seeks to preserve a strictly neutral attitude in religious matters.

The Brāhmanic settlements were probably most frequently situated in forests in ancient times. The contact with nature and absence of the evils of city life which this involved must have been important factors in creating an atmosphere which was most helpful in the formation of spiritual ideals. The classic poets love to depict the beautiful surroundings of the *āśramas* and the simple life of their inhabitants in contact with both animate and inanimate nature. Though the Brāhmanic education was no doubt carried on also in towns, especially in later times, the forest sanctuary has always been the Indian ideal. This is another of the ancient educational ideals which is most important and one that is worthy of the attention of modern educationists.

The purpose of this book so far has been to trace ancient Indian systems of education, and in emphasizing some of the ideals which they have worked out no attempt is made to be exhaustive, nor to show all the bearings which the ancient ideals have on present conditions. This would need a book to itself. There can be no doubt, however, that the development of India's future educational ideals will not be governed solely by Western educational thought and practice, and in education as in all other phases of social life a mingling of East and West is not only inevitable but desirable. Experience alone will determine how this

can be done with the least possible friction and waste of effort.

The future of India and Pakistan lies with their children; and these lands with their vast populations present wonderful opportunities to their educators, as well as huge responsibilities. There are, and no doubt will always be, many controversies with regard to the most desirable developments of education, but it is to be hoped that there will arise therefrom systems, which, while incorporating new and old, will transcend both in their practice as well as in their ideals.

## CHAPTER XII

### WESTERN EDUCATION—BEGINNINGS

So far we have been concerned with indigenous types of education in India. But as India came more and more in contact with European countries her way of life, including her system of education, was bound to be influenced.

Before the introduction of education on Western lines into India instruction was confined to a very small portion of the population. Those of the lower castes and outcastes were practically without any literary education. Persons belonging to the landholding and trading classes were often receiving some kind of education preparing them for their work in life. Among the Brāhmans, however, almost all males received enough education to enable them to read and write, while a large number of them were trained to acquire a knowledge of higher subjects such as grammar, logic, mathematics and metaphysics. But the number of females of all classes receiving education was very small. It must be remembered, however, that in other countries also at that time education was still very far from being universal, and it was not till the nineteenth century that compulsory education became the rule in some Western lands.

We are not concerned to trace the gradual infiltration of Western peoples into India leading to that strange anomaly of history, the ruling of large parts of the country by trading companies.

As more and more Europeans came to settle in the country in the centres (known as factories) from which their trade was organized, the need arose for schools for their children, most of whom were, owing to inter-marriage, Anglo-Indians. Later on it was felt necessary to establish schools for the children of their Indian employees.

The Portuguese at Goa and other of their settlements and the French at Pondicherry started such schools. Later the English East India Company, that came to rule over a very large part of India, also followed the same practices.

The real pioneers of Western education in India were, however, Christian missionaries. The Portuguese Roman Catholic missionaries began this policy at Goa in the sixteenth century and the Dutch Protestant missionaries in Ceylon in the seventeenth century.

In 1706 the Germans Ziegenbalg and Plütschau, connected with the Danish mission, arrived at Tranquebar. They began to study Tamil and to bring out books in that language. These included the Christian scriptures. Before long they opened schools for Indian children where the teaching was in Tamil. Later on schools were started using English, as this was needed for the children of many of those employed by the East India Company. All these schools seem to have had a rather unstable existence owing to various difficulties such as providing the money for their maintenance and finding suitable teachers. There was also the problem of religious instruction.

In 1727 Schulze, another German missionary, came to be employed by the English Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge. He was instrumental in starting schools which eventually were established at Madras, Tanjore, Cuddalore, Palamcottah and Trichinopoly. The famous missionary, Schwartz, who arrived in India in 1760 was also employed by this society in this work.

Christian missionary efforts began later in north India. In 1793 William Carey came to Serampore, and soon the Baptist Mission of which he was the leader had large numbers of children in their schools. In 1804 the London

Missionary Society began work in south India as well as in Bengal, and a little later the Church Missionary Society and the Methodist Missionary Society in other places. Owing to the difficulties enumerated above these schools were often not as satisfactory as could be desired. But at Serampore under the guidance of such men as Carey, Ward, and Marshman there were some schools of a higher grade with a wider curriculum.

One important result of these efforts by missionary societies was to stir up the Government both in England and in India to realize that it was its duty to do something for the education of the people under its rule.

In 1784 the resident at Tanjore, Mr Sullivan, brought forward a scheme for schools teaching in English for boys of the higher castes, but except for those who were looking forward to being employed by the East India Company these schools did not immediately become popular. This seems to have been the first attempt by anyone in the Government to do anything to promote education in India.

At Calcutta in 1784 the Governor, Warren Hastings, established a Madrasa (which still continues) for the education of Muslim boys, and here Arabic was the medium of instruction. In 1791 Jonathan Duncan, the British resident at Benares, opened there a Sanskrit College. One purpose of these Colleges was to have men trained to be interpreters of Muslim or Hindu Law which was needed in the administration of justice. A little later in 1800 Lord Wellesley, the successor of Warren Hastings, established at Calcutta a college for training those who would become civil servants so that they might be proficient in Indian languages as well as in Hindu and Muslim law.

Every ten years the charter of the East India Company

had to be renewed by the Government in London, and when this was done efforts were made to introduce reforms in administration. In 1793 an attempt was made to insert a clause in the charter which would make it the duty of the Company to concern itself with education. Its chief advocates were a group of earnest Christians led by Charles Grant and William Wilberforce. It is perhaps not surprising that they were unsuccessful: even in Britain in those days it had not come to be recognized that it was the duty of a government to promote education.

In 1813, however, the clause relating to education was accepted and provision was made for it by setting aside from the revenue of the Company £10,000 each year. The same charter provided that money should be spent on publishing books in the local languages.

The Directors of the Company were most uncertain as to how they should spend this educational grant. One proposal was to use it for improving the Colleges which were already in existence. The amount in any case was too small for any widespread programme. It was not until 1823 that any real steps were taken to carry out the orders of Parliament. In that year, however, a 'Committee of Public Instruction' was appointed to deal with educational matters. All the schools maintained by the Government were placed in its charge. These included the Madrasa at Calcutta, the Sanskrit College at Benares, and a few others, some of which were elementary schools. Amongst the Colleges was the Vidyālaya at Calcutta. This had been started in 1816 at the instigation of David Hare, who was a watchmaker. He called together a number of Hindu gentlemen, interested them in the scheme and money was raised for the purpose. The college was to impart European knowledge. In 1819

it came under Government authority and developed into what was afterwards called the Presidency College.

The Committee also spent some of its funds on the publication of oriental books, but there was very little demand for these. On the other hand the School Book Society, a private venture, was selling large numbers of books in English and was making a profit from this activity.

The use of English as the medium of instruction was becoming more popular. One evidence of this was the great success of the school started in 1830 at Calcutta by the Scottish missionary, Dr Alexander Duff. Even in the Government sponsored colleges which provided an education in oriental subjects, English classes were introduced.

When the charter of the East India Company was renewed in 1833 the amount ordered to be spent on education was increased to £100,000. Education on Western lines had now come to have a definite place in the education of the youth of India, but it had only so far touched a very small proportion of the population, and meanwhile schools of the indigenous type still continued.

The Committee of Public Instruction which was responsible for the allocation of the funds set aside for education, and for the formation of a policy, had now to face an important problem. Should the Government continue to encourage schools and colleges on Oriental lines, or should Western education be given the preference? The Committee, which had ten members, seems to have been equally divided in opinion on this matter.

But in 1834 there came to India Thomas Babington Macaulay (afterwards Lord Macaulay), the well-known historian. He had been appointed as the Legislative Member of the Supreme Council and President of the

**Committee of Public Instruction.** Macaulay gave his whole-hearted support in favour of Western education and his views were eventually accepted. On 2 February 1835, he wrote a minute which was endorsed on 7 March by the Governor, Lord William Bentinck.

The result of this action was that in future the teaching in high schools and colleges would be in English, and this momentous decision has had its effect on educational policy in India right down to the present time. Today opinions still differ as they did then as to whether this was a step in the right direction. In any case its consequences have been far-reaching. So far as the educated classes were concerned it gave them a language in which those from all over India could converse and in this way it helped towards the unification of India. It would have been difficult at that time, as it is not easy today, to find another language which could be used throughout the country. The rulers of those days foresaw that the introduction of Western education would bring India into closer contact with Western ideas of government and democracy and lead to Indian nationalism and the demand for self-government. But Macaulay himself said that if that day should come he would regard it as the proudest day of English history.

The old classical schools for Oriental education still continued and even received monetary grants to help in their support. But the result of the proclamation of Lord William Bentinck was the starting of many new schools in which the English language was used as the medium of instruction, and the older Oriental schools were over-shadowed. These English schools were popular with Indian students and their parents. One reason for this was the utilitarian one that such education might lead to a remunerative post in government employment.

This was encouraged by a proclamation made in 1844 by the Governor, Lord Hardinge, that those educated in English schools (whether government or private) and who passed an examination held annually should be preferred in appointments to government offices which were of course almost entirely of a clerical nature. This gave young men the idea that they could expect such employment at the end of their studies, and such expectations tended to the neglect of studies which might prepare them for agriculture, trade or industry. Thus the proclamation, though well meant, helped to bring about a state of affairs which has resulted in the large number of educated persons unemployed today, for the number of clerical posts available has always been far too small to absorb them all.

There was, however, also a demand for education in the Indian languages. The Committee of Public Instruction had only limited funds at its disposal, and seems to have thought it best to concentrate on educating comparatively few persons in English. But others, and especially the missionaries, were very much in favour of education through the medium of the local languages, and schools with this kind of teaching, chiefly under private management, continued to increase. There was, however, no uniformity from province to province. The starting of government schools depended very much on the governors of provinces and on those who were members of the Councils of Education which now replaced the Committee of Public Instruction. These Councils were concerned with smaller areas but had greater powers.

Three governors especially did much in their respective provinces for education through the medium of the local languages. These were Mountstuart Elphinstone (afterwards Lord Elphinstone) of Bombay, Sir Thomas Munro

of Madras, and James Thomason in the North-Western Provinces. The last named even levied for educational purposes a small tax on land.

Side by side with the efforts of governors the *tols* and *maktab*s still continued, and missionary societies, both Protestant and Roman Catholic, were still doing more than governments. It is said that in 1853 there were less than thirty thousand pupils in Government educational institutions, whereas in mission schools there were ten times as many.

## CHAPTER XIII

### WESTERN EDUCATION—DEVELOPMENTS

BEFORE the renewal of the charter of the East India Company in 1853 (the last renewal before the rule of the Company ended in 1858) another inquiry was made into educational policy in India. The inquiry produced two important decisions. One was that in religion the government was to observe a policy of strict neutrality. A Bible might be placed in the library of a government school or college but no attempt was to be made to urge students to read it. The other important decision was that universities on Western lines were to be established in India.

The first places chosen for universities were Bombay, Calcutta, and Madras. These came into being in 1857. The university for the Panjab at Lahore was not started till 1878 and that at Allahabad not till 1887. These universities had a Chancellor (who was the governor of the province), a Vice-Chancellor, who was the real head, and a Senate. They were not residential universities, but only held examinations, and such income as they had depended on the fees paid for admission to these examinations. Colleges scattered over the provinces were affiliated to each university and in these colleges the actual teaching was done. They were largely under private management and they were encouraged because they cost the government less than colleges maintained at its own expense.

As the majority of the students entering these colleges hoped at the end of their course to obtain government employment nearly all of these colleges were arts colleges. Some students, however, might become teachers or lawyers. As yet there was no college specializing in law, but medical

colleges were started at Bombay, Calcutta, and Madras. The course required by these universities, in which all the teaching was in English, entailed first the passing of the matriculation examination, then two years for the Intermediate course, and then two years for the course which led to the Bachelor of Arts degree. For the degree of Master of Arts another examination after further study was to be passed.

Most of the students in high schools hoped at least to pass the matriculation examination of a university. This qualification, even without further study in college, could lead to some sort of clerical or teaching employment. The result was that secondary education came practically under the control of the universities which fixed the subjects for the matriculation examination, and there was a failure to provide courses for those whose future employment or function in life did not require the literary ideals of a university arts course.

Although the Dispatch of 1857 had envisaged more general education amongst the people of India there was much criticism that not enough along these lines had been done. In 1882 a Commission was appointed to review the whole system. One complaint was that higher education had been more favoured than elementary education and that the government, tending to increase its own institutions, which were more expensive, had discouraged private enterprise. The Commission recommended that primary education should in future have an exclusive claim on local educational funds, and should also have a larger claim on provincial revenues. School boards were brought into being to control and administer these new resources. In future with regard to higher education greater opportunities were to be given to private institutions. The Commission also recommended

that in all schools and colleges arrangements should be made for games, sports, and drill, and that in government institutions, where religious neutrality prevented religious instruction being given, moral education should be part of the curriculum. In practice, however, it is not easy to separate morality from religion.

One good recommendation was not put into practice. This urged the bifurcation of studies in high school's so that while some students should be prepared for the matriculation examination others should follow a course preparing for commerce and other non-literary pursuits.

In 1901 at the instance of Lord Curzon a University Commission was appointed which made suggestions for the improvement of colleges and high schools. This produced some good results. The teaching of science was introduced as a subject of the curriculum. This began in 1906 at Calcutta but was soon adopted elsewhere.

There was still much dissatisfaction with the educational system. While there was a greater demand than ever for higher education it was increasingly realized that the best results were not being achieved. Large numbers were passing the university examinations, but standards were low. Amongst those who had qualified, there was much unemployment and naturally a feeling of frustration.

In 1919 a Commission was appointed under the chairmanship of Sir Michael Sadler (and hence known as the Sadler Commission) to study the whole question of university education. Reforms since then have largely followed the recommendations of this Commission.

One important proposal was that the universities, instead of merely affiliating scattered colleges, should become unitary teaching universities. One such was established at Dacca which was to be a model for other

universities. Not very much could be done in this direction immediately. Local prejudice which was against the closing down of local colleges and grouping them in a central place, proved to be a serious obstacle to the carrying out of this reform. On the other hand post-graduate study and research work which the Commission recommended began to be developed, first at Calcutta and afterwards elsewhere.

There arose also a demand for a university for each linguistic area and some came into being on this account. A university was established at Benares to foster Hindu culture and one at Aligarh to do the same for Islam. Whereas in 1919 there were only the five universities mentioned above, by 1922 there were no less than fourteen.

The Montagu-Chelmsford Reforms developing self-government had now come into force, and as education was one of the subjects transferred to the control of the elected legislatures it tended to be influenced by party politics and popular clamour, and this did not make it easy for universities to develop higher standards.

University requirements still dominated the curriculum of secondary schools, and an unflagging demand for education on these lines prevented very much being done to widen the curriculum or introduce other courses of study. As an alternative to the matriculation a School Final examination was introduced with a wider range of subjects and with greater importance attached to class work. Success in this examination was to be regarded as a qualification for employment in the lower grades of government service. The change brought no marked results, however, as pupils continued mostly to choose those subjects which would make it possible to take up a university course.

A minute of Lord Curzon in 1904 had laid down

that the extension of primary education was one of the most important duties of the State and this was followed by some expansion of primary education. In 1910 Gopal Krishna Gokhale introduced a bill in the Legislative Council to spread free and compulsory education throughout India, but this was not passed. When King George V visited India in 1912 he expressed in a proclamation his desire for the spreading of a network of colleges and schools all over the land. This too led to some extension of primary education, and of recent years there has been a growing desire that education should be made possible for all. From time to time attempts to introduce compulsory education in selected areas have been made.

In 1944 an important document with regard to the development of education was published. It was drawn up by the Central Advisory Board of Education which had about forty members, official and non-official, and as its chairman was Sir John Sargent, it is generally known as the Sargent Report. It was a serious attempt to outline a plan for the development of education in the whole of the country. If accepted, the plan could be gradually introduced and would take at least thirty years for its full implementation. It proposed the establishment of nursery schools on a voluntary basis for children under six, while from six to fourteen years of age education should be free and compulsory for both boys and girls. Education at this stage would provide for what all ought to know in order to take their place in the world, and would include a handicraft suitable to the locality where the school was situated. After eleven years of age children would be selected to go on to higher education, which might be either in a high school or a technical school, according to the aptitude they had shown in the junior department. Those selected for the higher education

should remain under instruction until seventeen years of age and for those unable to pay the fees required at this stage scholarships should be provided. Even in the high schools, however, there should be a bifurcation of studies, one course being academic, leading to the university, and the other vocational. Certain subjects would be the same for all students.

For the carrying out of this scheme the Report suggested that large numbers of schools would have to be built and many more teachers would be required. The qualifications of teachers should be raised and this would mean the establishment of many more training schools. The development of education visualized by this scheme would involve a very heavy expenditure of public funds, but this is a problem not for the educationist but for those responsible for the government of the country. Developments since the publication of this report have largely followed the suggestions which it made.

There has often been a tendency for Western education in India to be lacking in variety and to be squeezed into the moulds of code-bound uniformity. Nevertheless from time to time there have been institutions which have tried to break away and experiment with new methods of education.

Early in this century Rabindranath Tagore, the famous Bengali poet, started a school known as Visvabharati, which gradually developed into a complete arts college. The distinctive aim of this institution was that it should be on Indian lines. Indian culture would be taught, Indian customs respected and a simple life led in common by both teachers and pupils. Classes are held in the open and there is in accordance with Indian ideals a personal relationship between teacher and pupil.

At Cossipore near Calcutta Rewachand Animananda

opened the Boy's Own Home in 1904. In this school also the Indian ideal of the *guru* in intimate relation like a father with his pupils was stressed. Numbers were limited in order to preserve this relationship, and as in the Indian school of ancient times all the work of the house was done by the pupils along with their teachers. Every subject was taught by the direct method and the older pupils helped to teach the younger ones.

Some years ago at Moga in the Panjab at a training school for teachers in village schools, a new method was introduced. This school belonged to the American Presbyterian mission, but now the Indian Church shares in the responsibility. The method is known as the 'Project method' because the school work is centred round certain projects varying from time to time in which the pupils have a share in the initiative and discover how what they are learning applies to the practical concerns of life. The students also take a large degree of responsibility in the discipline of the school and elect for this purpose their own *panchayat*.

Schools have arisen in some places, such as Dehra Dun, which are an attempt to reproduce in India schools on the lines of the English 'public schools' like Eton and Harrow. The pupils come from the families of Indian princes and other wealthy homes. They seem to be popular amongst those who can afford to pay for them, but they have little value for Indian education as a whole.

An experiment far more suited to Indian conditions and likely to have far-reaching results was formerly known as the Wardha Scheme but is now called "Basic Education". This owes its initiation to the late Mr. M. K. Gandhi (Mahatma Gandhi) and because of this has been taken up with enthusiasm. It has many similarities to the Moga Project method mentioned above. Since the attainment

of independence in 1947 it has become prominent in the educational policy of that country and will be referred to in the next chapter.

At the beginning of the nineteenth century, before the Government became seriously concerned with the matter, education in India, in spite of its long history of learning and culture, was at low ebb. It was only in that century that the government in England realized its responsibilities for the education of its own people, and not till 1870 that education was made compulsory in that country. It is not then surprising that in the early days of its rule in India the British Raj did nothing to promote education. However, gradually and progressively this was changed, and as the years went by increasing efforts were made to plan and apply an educational policy. When British rule closed in India the recognized institutions numbered about 196,000 and pupils almost 16,500,000. Of the pupils about 3,500,000 were females. 86 per cent of the institutions were controlled by the State or were receiving State aid. The census of 1931 showed that only 156 males and 29 females per thousand were literate. But the census of 1941 showed an increase in literacy, and 12.2 per cent of the population were literate compared with only 7 per cent in 1931. In 1946 there were nineteen universities in India and Pakistan.

CHAPTER XIV  
EDUCATION SINCE 1947  
(D. D. KARVE)

*India*

THE British control over the Indian sub-continent came to an end in August 1947 with the establishment of India and Pakistan as two independent countries. A new chapter in the history of education in the two countries was thus opened.

At first all attention had to be focussed on many urgent questions such as the resettlement of refugees, drafting of a new constitution, formulating plans for all-round development. The Constituent Assembly adopted India's federal constitution in 1950 and education became the responsibility of the constituent states. However, as we shall see later, the Union government shared the financial burdens to some extent in the field of higher education and, in the implementation of the schemes under the five-year plans. The First Five-Year Plan was put into force in April 1951, the Second in April 1956 and the Third in April 1961. In all three Plans great stress was laid on education and it is obvious that great progress has been made.

*Primary Education*—The stability and progress of a country which adopts a democratic constitution depends to a large extent on a properly educated electorate. This was clearly recognized by the framers of the Indian Constitution and certain provisions were included in it which had great influence on educational developments. It was set as an objective for example that free and compulsory education should be introduced for all children between the ages of 6 and 14 by 1965. Unfortunately the economic,

social and administrative difficulties that would have to be overcome in order to reach this goal were not fully realized and the country is still far behind in the achievement of the objective. This can be best illustrated with the help of official figures for the number of institutions and the number of pupils in elementary schools in 1950-51 and 1960-61, the latest year for which such information is available. (All statistical data are taken from *India 1963*, Publications Division, Ministry of Information and Broadcasting, Delhi.)

#### ELEMENTARY EDUCATION

<i>Year</i>	<i>No. of Institutions</i>	<i>No. of Pupils</i>
1950-51	2,09,671	1,82,93,967
1960-61	3,30,304	2,65,98,550

Even in the matter of literacy, the progress made during the decade 1951-61 was not very satisfactory, as is shown by the results of the 1961 census :

#### PERCENTAGE LITERACY

<i>Year</i>	<i>Males</i>	<i>Females</i>	<i>Persons</i>
1951	24.87	7.87	16.61
1961	34.4	12.9	24.0

Various factors are responsible for slowing down the progress in the spread of primary education. First, there is the economic factor. A large number of parents are too poor to send their children even to a free school, because they have no money to provide them with clothes and books. Or, the older child may be wanted at home to look after the younger children or to watch the grazing

cattle while both parents work outside the house. Secondly, in certain regions of the country and in rural areas generally, there is opposition to the education of girls. This is well illustrated by the lower percentage of literacy among women. Finally, the training of the hundreds of thousands of teachers and the opening of the necessary number of schools within easy reach of the 500,000 villages have presented administrative and financial problems which have not been easy to solve. During the early stages of the Third Five-Year Plan, it was realized that the objective set down in the Constitution could not be achieved and it was decided to concentrate all efforts on getting as many of the 6 to 11 age group into primary schools as possible by 1966. The following figures giving the achievements of the first two Five-Year Plans and the target for the Third Plan may give an idea of the magnitude of the task. In 1950-51, 42.6 per cent of the 6-11 group were in primary schools. At the end of the First Plan this percentage increased to 52.9 and at the end of the Second Plan it went up to 61.1. The target for the Third Plan (1966) has been set at 76.4 per cent.

Primary education is financed directly or indirectly by the state governments, although the administration is entrusted to local bodies like municipalities, district local boards or *Zilla Parishads*. In 1960-61 the total expenditure on primary education from all sources was Rs 72,21,00,000.

*Basic Education*—Even before the achievement of independence many Indian leaders had recognized one characteristic of the educational system in British India, namely that it was almost entirely bookish and that the pupils were hardly ever encouraged to use their hands. This was more or less in keeping with the social structure of the Hindus in which the Brāhmans were considered to be superior to the artisan castes. Mahatma Gandhi and his

band of helpers introduced the idea of an educational system centred on a craft and called it 'basic education'. The original plan was based on spinning and weaving of cotton as forming the core to which all other subjects like history, geography, arithmetic, etc., were to be related. At one stage it was even thought that the scheme could be made self-supporting with the help of the sale proceeds of the cloth or yarn produced by the teacher and pupils. Later on the scheme was modified so that this extreme position was given up, other crafts like gardening, paper and board work, carpentry and metalwork, leather work etc., were introduced as substitutes for spinning and weaving and the time to be devoted to the learning and practice of the craft was reduced. It was thought that basic education would be more suitable for a predominantly agricultural country with a very high proportion of the population living in villages.

Both the Central and State governments have lent their support to the scheme of basic education, but still the progress has not been very rapid. In the first place, the supply of properly trained teachers has not been adequate, and secondly, not all educationists in India have favoured the idea of basic education as formulated by Mahatma Gandhi and his collaborators. The opposition has been not so much to the teaching of a craft in schools, but to giving it the central position in the whole process of education and relating all other subjects to the craft. In most states basic schools are being established and are working side by side with the ordinary (non-basic) schools. It is doubtful if all elementary schools in India will be transformed into basic schools in the foreseeable future.

*Secondary Education*—It is usual in India to designate as secondary education all instruction after the primary stage, i.e. from the fifth year (pupils' age about 11+) to the

end of the school course and culminating in the secondary school leaving examination (pupils' age about 16 or 17). For a long time this examination was called the 'matriculation' examination and was conducted by the universities. It also served as the entrance test for higher education. During the last two decades special boards have been established in all states which now conduct this examination and the universities admit those students who pass it with certain specified groups of subjects or with a certain minimum number of marks. There is some variation in the nomenclature and duration of the secondary stage in the different states. Occasionally the first three years are called 'middle school' and the higher standards 'high school proper'. Similarly in some states the course from the beginning to the end of high school is of ten years duration while in others it is eleven years. The following table gives statistical information about the progress of secondary education during the period 1950-51 to 1960-61.

#### SECONDARY EDUCATION

<i>Year</i>	<i>No. of Institutions</i>	<i>No. of Pupils</i>
1950-51	20,884	52,32,009
1959-60	66,916	1,80,26,594

Before 1947 almost all high schools taught only the 'academic' subjects and there was no provision in these schools for teaching technical or vocational subjects. There were a few special schools for this purpose, but their number was altogether too small. Soon after attaining independence, the Government of India appointed a commission to review the progress made in secondary education and to make proposals for its all-round improvement and development. The report of this commission

(published by the Ministry of Education in 1953) contains many far-reaching suggestions. One of these was about the need for diversification of the high-school course and the establishment of multi-purpose high schools. Another was the introduction of a uniform eleven-year course for the ordinary school-leaving stage and twelve years for the 'higher secondary' examination, which alone would be the qualification for entrance to the universities and colleges.

The addition of technical, vocational, commerce, art and other such diversified courses to the already existing high schools or the starting of new multi-purpose high schools requires not only substantial expenditure of money for buildings and equipment, but also well-trained teachers in large numbers. The progress in this direction has therefore not been very rapid. The following table gives information on this point :

#### VOCATIONAL AND TECHNICAL EDUCATION

<i>Year</i>	<i>No. of Institutions</i>	<i>No. of Pupils</i>
1950-51	2339	1,87,194
1959-61	4130	3,98,609

The total expenditure on secondary education in 1960-61 was Rs 110,24,00,000 and that on vocational and technical education, Rs 10,96,00,000. The number of multipurpose high schools in 1955-56 was 255, which increased to 2115 in 1960-61. The target for the end of the Third Five-Year Plan (1965-66) is 2446.

It has been mentioned above that primary education is almost entirely the responsibility of the state governments, though the actual conduct is in charge of the local bodies. There are a few non-government agencies like Christian missions, charitable trusts, voluntary non-profit associa-

tions etc., which conduct primary schools in cities and towns, but these are the exceptions. In the case of secondary education, the situation is quite different. It is in fact not very much different from what it was before 1947. Most high schools are conducted by non-government organizations and the departments of education of the states exercise control over them through their inspecting officers. These high schools receive from the state government concerned an annual grant usually forming a fixed proportion of their expenditure. Matters such as the terms and conditions of service and qualifications of the teachers, the scale of fees to be charged, the subjects to be taught in each standard, the textbooks to be used, etc., are regulated by the department of education.

Most state governments are directing their efforts towards the establishment of technical, vocational or multi-purpose schools, because these require larger financial resources than are possessed by non-government organizations.

With the rapid expansion of elementary education, the number of pupils coming up to the secondary level has also increased very considerably and many new high schools have been and are being started. Simultaneously the number of pupils in each class has been allowed to increase and many schools are working in two shifts so that the buildings are used to the fullest possible extent. All these factors have resulted in some fall in the standard of secondary education.

Before 1947, with only a few exceptions, English was in general use as the language of instruction in the higher standards of high schools all over India. The trend for the replacement of English by regional languages, which had begun even before that, gradually gathered strength and very soon there was a complete change. In the case of the

large majority of pupils the regional language was also the mother-tongue and the change agreed with the nationalistic sentiments of the educated classes. It was soon realized, however, that there was one class of pupils who were greatly handicapped by this change. The children of the upper ranks of the employees of the central government, business executives, technologists, defence personnel etc., who did not remain for long in one and the same state, found it necessary to join schools which used English as the medium of instruction. Thus they did not have to face the difficult problem of learning a new regional language half-way through their high-school course. In all big cities and towns there are high schools which continue to use English as the language of instruction and this is likely to continue for some time. This question assumes even greater importance in higher education (see below).

*Higher Education*—Like the two lower levels, higher education has also seen considerable expansion since 1947. The number of universities, which was 3 in 1858, rose to 27 in 1950-51, and 54 in 1962. In the last two years several new universities have been started. Of all the universities, four are 'central' universities, i.e. financed entirely out of central government funds, while the others are supported by the state governments. The number of students in higher education was 4,03,519 in 1950-51 and rose to 9,76,999 in 1960-61. It is well over a million now (1964). More than half the institutions giving higher education are colleges of arts and science while those which teach commerce courses or undertake teacher training are also quite numerous. The number of engineering, medical and other professional colleges is relatively small.

A special feature of the institutions of higher education

in India needs to be noted. For the first sixty years after the establishment of the first universities, i.e. up to about 1920, all universities in India were affiliating and examining bodies. Later on, beginning with the University of Calcutta, most universities started their own departments for postgraduate teaching and research. However, undergraduate teaching continued to be the responsibility of the affiliated colleges which were situated in different places in the region under the jurisdiction of the particular university. Another type of university, of which there are now several in different parts of the country, came into existence beginning from about 1916. This was the unitary and teaching university, with no outside colleges affiliated to it, which undertook directly through its own teachers all instruction from undergraduate to postgraduate and also research.

Non-government voluntary organizations take the major share in conducting institutions of higher education in the same way as secondary education. They receive from the state governments annual grants usually based on the total expenditure. Most of the engineering, medical, technological and other specialized institutions, which require a large initial expenditure and also high current expenses, are conducted by government. In recent years several new institutions unconnected with the universities have been started. Among these may be mentioned the 'national' laboratories, mainly devoted to applied research, under the auspices of the Council of Scientific and Industrial Research, the technological institutes at Kharagpur, Powai (Bombay), Madras, Delhi, Kanpur, etc., established in co-operation with different foreign countries and international bodies like Unesco, and certain similar institutions conducted by the states.

Many educationists have expressed the opinion that the

expansion of secondary and higher education which has taken place since 1947 has been too rapid and that the supply of adequately qualified teachers, of equipment for libraries and laboratories and even the provision of buildings have not kept pace with it. The result has been a lowering of quality. On the other hand, there are many and persistent pressures from different directions for a rapid quantitative expansion even at the risk of some deterioration of standards. With the introduction of adult suffrage, the rural population and the castes which previously did not care for education but who form the majority of the population are now in a position to exert pressure on the state government. Many new colleges which, at least in the initial stages, are poorly equipped and staffed, have been permitted to be affiliated to the universities. In the case of medical, engineering and other professional institutions, which are mostly run by Government, the number of vacancies is small in relation to the large numbers seeking admission. Political pressure is often exerted in order to reserve a certain proportion of the seats for castes which are educationally backward. Naturally this militates against the principle of admission by merit. The rapid increase in population and the relatively slow rate of the growth of industries is also leading to an increase in the number of students in colleges and universities—a kind of hidden unemployment.

*Language of Instruction*—From the establishment of the first institutions of higher education during the British regime, up to 1947 and even for about a decade afterwards English was the only language used as the medium of instruction in universities and colleges. In fact English was the language of communication for the educated people of India, because no other language was understood in all parts of the country. The movement for the

replacement of English by an Indian language began to gather momentum after the adoption of the Constitution in 1950. One of the provisions of the Constitution was that by 1965 Hindi should become the 'Official Language of the Union'. Two distinct trends could be observed not only among politicians but also among educationists.

There was one group which wanted the regional language (i.e. the mother-tongue of a substantial majority of the students in most institutions) to take the place of English. They pointed to the generally accepted principle that the mother-tongue was the 'natural' medium of instruction. The fact that most states had announced the intention of making the respective regional languages the languages of state administration also lent some force to this group. The other school of thought drew attention to the need for maintaining and encouraging the unity of India, particularly in the intellectual field and advocated one single medium all over the country at the level of higher education. That language, in their opinion, should be the one which was later going to be the 'official language of the Union', namely Hindi. In fact they wanted English to be replaced completely by Hindi in every sphere where the former was used before Independence.

The language question, as it is usually referred to, has caused a considerable amount of controversy in the country, not only with reference to the language of instruction but also to the language of administration.

Of course it is generally recognized that none of the regional languages of India is really capable of being used as a medium of instruction in higher education particularly for technical and professional subjects. There are hardly any textbooks or reference books or even an adequate terminology. Persons who have received higher education are generally engaged in all-India fields of activity—

higher ranks of administrators, doctors, advocates, engineers, industrialists, businessmen, journalists, scientists, diplomats, and officers in the armed forces. All these must be able to communicate easily with each other and with their opposite numbers outside the country. Also, if the universities in the different states use the regional language as the medium of instruction, migration of students and teachers will become impossible and this may ultimately undermine the intellectual activity in the country. Some universities have already adopted the regional language as the optional medium both for instruction and examination. In actual practice English continues to be used in the teaching of science, technology, medicine and other professional courses including law. It is difficult to say how this question is ultimately going to be solved, because, unless the control of the universities is transferred from the state governments to the Centre, regional forces will be difficult to resist.

Under the Indian Constitution education is the responsibility of the States, and the States are also responsible for finding the finance. This applies to all regular expenditure, but expenditure on the schemes of development and expansion under the Five-Year Plans is shared between the states and the Union. However, in the case of higher education a new departure from this general pattern should be mentioned. In 1953 the University Grants Commission was set up and in 1956 was given an autonomy status under a central law. This commission was entrusted with funds by the Union Ministry of Education and was charged with the duty of giving grants to universities and, through them, to the colleges, to help them improve their facilities, open new departments, appoint new teaching staff and raise their emoluments. Another important function which the commission is expected to

carry out is the maintenance and improvement of standards of higher education. This body, similar to the University Grants Committee in Great Britain, is thus in a position to help in the development of higher education to a very large extent. Incidentally, it provides the whole of the normal finance for the four 'central' universities. During 1959-60 it paid out recurring and non-recurring grants amounting to nearly eighty million rupees.

A few years after attaining independence, the Government of India appointed a commission composed of eminent educationists from India, the U.S. and the U.K. to report on the system of higher education in India and to make recommendations regarding the steps to be taken to improve it. The report of this body (published by the Manager of Publications, Delhi, in 1951) contains not only a valuable historical survey but also suggestions about such matters as the medium of instruction, the examination system, methods of instruction, entrance qualifications, etc.

It will be seen from this short account of the post-1947 period that the rapid increase in numbers is posing very difficult problems to educationists and administrators and it will be instructive to see how education fares in the next decade or two.

### *Pakistan*

As is well known, India was politically under a single central government in New Delhi up to 1947. In that year, two independent countries were created : India and Pakistan. The basis of the partition was that those regions which had a majority of Muslims were constituted into Pakistan while the other regions remained in India. Immediately after Partition there was a large-scale emi-

gration of Hindus from Pakistan and of Muslims from India. The resettlement of these people presented very difficult social and economic problems to the governments of both countries and delayed plans for the re-organization of education.

Although in a general way one can say that at the time of Partition educational conditions in Pakistan were the same as in India, one has to remember that there were some factors which were different. In pre-Partition India it was generally true that the Muslims as a community were less advanced than the Hindus. Then again, Muslim women observed *purdah* to a much greater extent than Hindu women. Therefore one can safely make a guess that educationally the regions which were constituted into Pakistan started with a handicap. Then Pakistan has the geographical handicap of having two parts separated by India. These two parts, East and West Pakistan, have many differences in language, history and social structure and Pakistan thus faces an uphill task in the matter of educational planning.

<sup>8</sup> During the agitation for a separate Muslim state prior to 1947, Muslims in India used to insist that Urdu was their language and that the Muslims formed a distinct nation. Actually however, Urdu is also spoken by large numbers of people in post-independence India, particularly in the U.P. In the Muslim-majority regions, which ultimately formed Pakistan, other regional languages were spoken : Sindhi in Sind, Punjabi in West Punjab, Pushtu in the North-West Frontier Province, Bengali in East Bengal. Pakistan therefore has also to face the same kind of linguistic problems as India does, though from the point of view of religion Pakistan is more homogeneous.

No review of the progress of education in Pakistan

from 1947 onwards would be complete without a reference to the report of the Commission on National Education. The Commission, consisting of eminent educationists and educational administrators, was appointed at the end of December 1958 and submitted its report in August 1959. The Ministry of Education published the report in 1961.

The Commission took into consideration practically all important matters connected with primary, secondary and higher education, vocational, technical and higher professional education, women's education, etc. They made detailed recommendations under each of these heads and it is worthwhile giving some of them here.

(1) *Primary Education* : (a) The duration of compulsory elementary education should be eight years. This should be achieved in fifteen years. (b) Five years' compulsory schooling should be achieved within ten years. (c) Land, buildings, furniture, etc., required for compulsory primary education are to be provided by each community. (d) Current expenses are to be the responsibility of the provincial governments (special education tax and general revenues).

(2) *Secondary Education*. (a) For the present, secondary education should be for seven years (classes VI to XII), but after the introduction of compulsory schooling for eight years, the secondary stage will consist of classes IX to XII only. (b) Secondary education should be diversified by providing Practical Arts courses. (c) Within ten years, secondary schools should be transformed into multi-purpose schools.

(3) *Higher Education*. (a) Admission to the universities should be after completion of twelve years' study. (b) The course of study for the B.A. degree should be of three years' duration, that for the Master's degree should be of two

years' duration, and that for the Doctor's degree should be at least two years. (c) The medium of instruction in higher education should be the two national languages—Urdu and Bengali—but the change over from English should take place only after very careful preparation. Further, even after the change over English will continue to be taught compulsorily in classes VI to XII and also in universities.

(4) *Women's Education.* For most women, the Commission has recommended courses which include such special subjects as home-economics, child care etc. Some women are expected to go in for the same kind of education as men.

How far these recommendations have been accepted by the Pakistan government and if so, how far their implementation is proceeding smoothly, it is difficult to say.

The following statistical information about the state of education at different levels, based on the available information referring to 1962-63, will give the reader a fairly good picture.

	<i>No. of Institutions</i>	<i>No. of Students</i>	<i>Expenditure in Pakistani rupees</i>
Primary schools	56,000	6,400,000	170,000,000
Secondary schools	6,800	1,280,000	98,000,000
Colleges (Arts, Science, Commerce)	225	150,000	
Universities	6	10,000	10,000,000
Colleges (Engineering)	4	3,000	
Technical Institutes	18	4,000	1,120,000

Literacy in Pakistan was 19.2 per cent calculated on the total population of persons over 5 years of age. Literacy among males was 28.0 per cent and among females 9.3 per cent.

It will be seen that Pakistan with a population of about 90 million has to make up a lot of leeway even in comparison with India. Thus, in the case of higher education for example, India has a higher percentage of students in colleges, universities and other institutions compared to Pakistan. However, it must be admitted that Pakistan has made significant progress during the last fifteen years and it is expected that the rate of advance will gain momentum in the coming years.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

A large number of books on Indian history, literature, and religions contain occasional references to the ancient systems of education, and also supply the necessary background. Some of these are mentioned in the footnotes. The following books contain some of the more important references.

### FOR GENERAL OUTLINES OF THE ANCIENT SYSTEMS

Graves, F.P., *A History of Education* (Vol. I).  
Laurie, S.S., *Historical Survey of Pre-Christian Education*.  
Monroe, P., *Cyclopaedia of Education*.  
Hastings' *Encyclopaedia of Religion and Ethics*.

### FOR BRAHMANIC EDUCATION

Hastings' *Encyclopaedia of Religion and Ethics* (article on 'Āśrama').  
Volumes of the *Sacred Books of the East* (edited by F. Max Müller).  
Vols. I and XV, *The Upanishads* (translated by F. Max Müller).  
Vol. II, *The Sūtras of Āpastamba and Gautama* (translated by J. G. Bühler).  
Vol. XIV, *The Dharmasūtras of Vasishtha and Baudhāyana* (translated by J. G. Bühler).  
Vols. XII, etc., *The Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa* (translated by Eggeling).  
Vol. XXV, *The Law Code of Manu* (translated by J.G. Bühler).  
Müller, F. Max, *Lectures on the Origin of Religion*.  
Müller, F. Max, *Sanskrit Literature*.

- Macdonell, A.A., *Sanskrit Literature*.  
 Altekar, A.S., *Education in Ancient India*.  
 Bokil, V.P., *The History of Education in India*.  
 Das, S.K., *The Educational System of the Ancient Hindus*.  
 Adam, William, *Reports on Vernacular Education in Bengal*, 1835-1838 (edited by Rev. J. Long, 1868).  
 Ward, William, *A View of the Hindoos*.  
*Nadia Gazetteer (Bengal Gazetteers, No. 24)*, 1910.

#### FOR VOCATIONAL EDUCATION

- Kauṭilya's *Arthaśāstra* (translated by R. Shāmaśāstry).  
 Coomaraswamy, A. K., *The Industrial Arts of India*.  
*The Dharmasūtras* (as above).  
*The Law Code of Manu* (as above).  
 Altekar, A.S., *Education in Ancient India*.  
 Das, S.K., *The Educational System of the Ancient Hindus*.

#### FOR BUDDHIST EDUCATION

- Beal, A., *Buddhist Records of the Western World* (translation of the *Travels of Hiuen Tsiang*).  
 Legge, J., *Fāhien (A Record of Buddhistic Kingdoms)*.  
 Takakusu, I., *A Record of the Buddhist Religion (Travels of I-Tsing)*.  
 Childers, F., Article in *Contemp. Rev.*, Feb. 1876, with translation of *Sigalowāda Sutta*.  
*Sacred Books of the East*, Vols. XIII, XVII, XX, *Vinaya Texts* (translated by Rhys Davids and Oldenberg).  
 Satish Chandra Vidyabhusana, *History of the Medieval School of Indian Logic*.  
 Sankalia, H.D., *The University of Nālanda*.

#### FOR MUSLIM EDUCATION

- Jaffar, S.M., *Education in Muslim India*, 1936.

Law, Narendra Nath, *Promotion of Learning in India during Muhammadan Rule.*

*Ain-i-Akbari* (translated by H. Blochmann).

Bernier, F., *Travels in the Mogul Empire* (translated by A. Constable).

Adam, W., *Reports* (as above).

Maulvi Abul Hasnāt Nadvī, *Hindustān kī Qodīm Islāmi* (in Urdu).

#### FOR PRIMARY EDUCATION

Adam, W., *Reports* (as above).

Gover, C. E., Article in *Indian Antiquary*, Feb., 1873 (II, 52) on 'Pyal Schools in Madras'.

Report of Education Commission of 1882 (with appendixes relating to different provinces).

*Quinquennial Review of Education in India*, 1907-1912.

Satthianadhan, S., *History of Education in the Madras Presidency*.

Thomas, F. W., *The History and Prospects of British Education in India*.

Matthai, J., *Village Government in British India* (ch. ii).

Bühler, J. G., *Indian Palaeography*.

#### FOR WOMEN'S EDUCATION

Books from above list cited as references in text.

#### CENTRES OF LEARNING

Books from above list cited as references in text.

#### FOR EDUCATION AMONGST SYRIAN CHRISTIANS

Brown, L., *The Indian Christians of St. Thomas*.

Tisserant E., *Eastern Christianity in India* (English version by Fr. E.R. Hambye).

## FOR MODERN PERIOD

- Hampton, H. V., *Biographical Studies in Modern Indian Education.*
- Thomas, F. W., *The History and Prospects of British Education in India.*
- Siqueira, T. N., *Modern Indian Education.*
- Zia Uddin Ahmad, *Systems of Education* (pp 215-91).
- Year Books and Reports issued by the Governments of India and Pakistan.
- Handbook of Basic Education* issued by the Government of India.
- Bhatia, Hans Raj, *What Basic Education Means.*

## INDEX

- Accounts (commercial and agricultural), 139, 153, 158, 162, 164, 171.  
 Adam, William, 134, 151f., 159, 160, 168.  
 Adhvaryu, 5f.  
 Agra, 111, 116, 122, 132, 148.  
 Agriculture, 51, 54, 60f., 119, 139, 151.  
*Ain-i-Akbari*, 118.  
 Ajmere, 109, 148.  
 Akbar, 14, 68, 115f., 123, 124, 168.  
 Alā-ud-din, 110.  
 Algebra, 33, 35.  
 Altamsh, 109.  
*Amarakośa*, 35, 104.  
*Angas*, 33, 36, 43, 47, 48, 57.  
 Animananda, Rewachand, 210.  
 Apastamba, 13, 24, 48.  
 Arabic language and influence, 37, 63, 108, 112, 115, 126, 131, 136, 149, 160.  
*Āranyakas*, 10, 32, 33.  
 Ārchika, 5.  
*Arthaśāstras*, 48, 50f., 55, 66, 76.  
 Āryabhatia, 35.  
 Aryan race and culture, 1f., 8, 72, 177f.  
*Aṣṭādhyāyī*, 34.  
 Aśoka, 63, 68, 102, 165f.  
 Āśramas, 25, 30, 47, 185.  
 Astronomy, 8, 33, 35, 97, 119, 134, 139, 149.  
*Atharvaveda*, 6, 18, 29.  
 Aurangzib, 125f., 149.  
 Bābar, 114f., 124.  
 Badaun, 111.  
 Bahādur Shāh, 132.  
 Bāhmani Kingdom, 113, 149.  
 Balban, 110.  
 Basic education, 211, 215-16.  
 Baudhāyana, 13, 37, 43, 48.  
 Bell, Dr. Andrew, 154, 193.  
 Benares, 15, 125, 139f., 199, 208.  
 Bengal, 15, 113, 134, 151, 154, 161.  
 Bentinck, Lord William, 151, 202.  
 Bernier, 68, 123f.  
*Bhartrihari*, 96, 100.  
 Bhikkhunis, 76.  
 Bhikkhus, 83f., 102f.  
 Bidar, 113, 149f.  
 Bijapur, 113.  
 Bodhisattva, 89.  
 Bombay, 151, 155, 161, 205, 206, 221.  
 Brahmachāri, 18, 25, 27, 72, 99.  
*Brāhmaṇas* 7f., 10, 17, 32, 33, 37, 46.  
 Brāhmanic system, 1-46 *passim*, 175-188.  
 Brāhmans, 1, 8, 12, 26, 27, 28, 46f., 57, 75, 108, 124, 136, 140, 142, 152, 169, 184, 215.  
 Buddhism, 14, 37, 76, 82f., 143f., 166f., 185.  
 Burma, 101, 103, 105.  
 Calcutta, 16, 199, 200, 205, 206, 207, 221.  
 Caste, 1-2, 8, 57, 64, 68, 82, 136, 139, 152, 189, 193.  
 Catrou, 117, 126.  
 Ceylon, 103.  
*Chāndogya Upanishad*, 18, 31.  
 Chivalry, 58f.  
 Christians, 179f.  
 Civil Service, 199, 203.  
 Commission on National Education, 227-28.  
 Committee of Public Instruction, 200-3.  
 Council of Scientific and Industrial Research, 221.  
 Craft (in Basic Education), 216.  
 Craftsmen, 64f., 106, 135.  
 Curriculum—  
 Basic Education, 216.  
 Brāhman, 31f., 139, 145.  
 Buddhist, 93f.  
 Kshatriyas, 48f.  
 Muslim, 108, 134, 148.  
 Primary, 153.  
 Vaiśyas, 60f.  
 Curzon, Lord, 207, 208.

- Dārā Shukoh, 123, 124.  
*Daśagrāntas*, 33.  
 Delhi, 110f., 115, 116, 124, 132, 149, 221.  
 Dharma, 13, 166.  
*Dharma Sūtras*, 13, 20, 37, 47, 48.  
 Dharmapāla, 146.  
 Dravidian culture, 176f.  
 Drawing, 69.  
 Dubois Abbe, 68, 76.  
 Duff, Alexander, 201.  
 Duncan, Jonathan, 199.
- East India Company, 151, 198-205.  
 Education Commission of 1882, 155, 168f., 206.  
 Elphinstone, Lord, 203.  
 Employment and education, 46f., 145, 159, 184f., 202, 206, 216.  
 English language, 198, 199, 201, 202, 219-20, 222f.  
 Ennāyiram, 141.  
 Etymology, 8, 34, 145.
- Fa-hien, 90f., 97, 102, 139, 143.  
 Fathpur Sikri, 116f.  
 Fees, 16, 26, 152, 157, 160, 169f.  
 Firuz Shāh, 68, 111, 123.  
 Firuzabād, 111.
- Games, 145, 207.  
 Gandhi, M. K., 211, 215.  
 Gautama, 13, 23, 26, 43, 82, 104, 105, 140.  
 Geography, 131.  
 Geometry, 33, 119.  
 Golkonda, 113.  
 Gokhale, G. K., 209.  
 Gopāla, 147.  
 Grammar, 8, 15, 34, 36, 93f., 96, 108, 131, 134, 142f., 145, 183, 190.  
 Greek influence, 36, 138.  
 Gṛihastha, 25, 30.  
*Gṛihya Sūtras*, 33.  
 Guilds, 65f.  
 Gujarāt, 113.  
 Guru, 19, 23, 191, 211.
- Hardinge, Lord, 203.  
 Harsha, 58f.  
 Hastings, Warren, 199.
- Hindi, 75, 112, 223.  
 Hiranyaparvata, 91.  
 History, 53, 119, 128, 131, 135, 148.  
*Hitopadeśa*, 42, 56, 175.  
 Hiuen Tsiang, 91f., 143, 147.  
 Hotri, 4f.  
 Humāyūn, 115.  
 Hyderabad, 113, 148.
- I-Tsing, 88, 92f., 98, 146.  
 Ibrāhim Sharki, 148.  
 Initiation, 12, 26f.
- Jagaddala, 147.  
 Jahāngīr, 68, 122, 124.  
*Jātaka*, 95, 97, 105, 139.  
 Jaunpur, 113, 132, 148.
- Kalpa*, 34, 48.  
 Karma, 11, 82, 185, 188f.  
 Kātyāyana, 35.  
 Kauṭilya, 50f., 55, 66, 76.  
 Kayasths, 152, 159.  
 Khalji dynasty, 110.  
 Khāndesh, 113.  
*Korān* 107, 111, 114, 133, 135, 160, 172.  
 Kshatriyas, 8, 12, 16-17, 26, 27, 28, 46f., 57, 184, 185.  
 Kutb-ud-dīn, 109.
- Law, 8, 15, 34, 37, 97, 108, 134, 135, 140.  
 Lexicography, 35, 94.  
 Libraries, 16, 113, 115, 126, 132.  
 Logic, 15, 34, 94, 95, 96, 106, 108, 119, 134, 140f., 145, 149.
- Macaulay, Lord, 201f.  
 Madhurai, 177.  
 Madras, 151, 156, 161, 205, 206, 221.  
 Madrasah, 108, 112, 119f., 132, 134, 136, 147, 152, 159.  
*Mahābhārāta*, 8, 49, 56, 64, 81.  
*Mahābhāṣya*, 35, 95.  
 Mahajani schools, 62, 170.  
*Mahāvagga*, 62, 163f.  
 Mahmūd of Ghaznī, 108f.  
 Maktab, 70, 108, 112, 114, 133, 136, 152, 159, 169f., 204.

- Malkapuram, 142.  
 Malpan, 182.  
 Mālwā, 78, 113.  
 Manu, 13, 16, 22, 23-24, 26, 37, 42, 51, 54, 60f., 73, 77, 162.  
 Maṭhas, 16.  
 Mathematics, 33, 35, 97, 119, 149, 153, 158, 164, 183.  
 Medicine, 34, 37, 62f., 94, 97, 106, 119, 134, 139, 149, 205-6.  
 Megasthenes, 30, 74, 163.  
 Metaphysics, 95, 96, 108, 134, 145.  
 Method, 7, 38, 40f., 96, 104, 135f., 153f., 155f., 158, 174, 211.  
 Military skill, 48f., 53, 127, 139.  
 Missionaries, Christian, 198f., 203, 204.  
 Monasteries (*see also* Maṭhas, Sangharamas and Viharas), 96f., 105, 164, 166.  
 Monitors, 42, 107, 154, 173-4, 193.  
 Montagu-Chelmsford Reforms, 208.  
 Muhammad Ghori, 109.  
 Müller, F. Max, 11, 32, 33, 34, 39, 42.  
 Mūltān, 113.  
 Munro, Sir Thomns, 203.  
 Music, 31, 76, 97, 116, 134.  
 Nadiā, 15, 140f.  
 Nālanda, 14, 63, 91f., 97, 98f., 143f.  
*Nannul Sutras*, 177f.  
 Nasīr-ud-dīn, 110.  
*Nitisāra*, 55.  
*Nitisāstras*, 48, 55.  
 Nyāya, 15, 38, 144.  
 Odantapurī 101, 147.  
 Orphans, education of, 113.  
 Padapāṭha, 7, 39.  
 Pakistan, 105, 225f.  
*Panchatantra*, 42, 53, 56, 175.  
 Pāṇini, 32, 34, 35, 36, 94, 139, 190.  
 Pansal schools, 103.  
 Parishads, 42f.  
 Pātaliputra (Patna), 90, 97, 102, 148.  
 Patanjali, 35, 95, 119, 190.  
 Pathśālas, 152f., 169.  
*Patimokkha*, 84.  
 Patna, *see* Pātaliputra.  
 Pavanandi, 178.
- Persian, 78-9, 108, 110, 112, 115, 116, 119, 123, 126, 133, 136, 159, 167.  
 Philology, 34.  
 Philosophy, 8, 15, 34, 37f., 51, 53, 75, 96, 148, 183.  
 Phonetics, 34, 35.  
 Pietra della Valle, 158, 168.  
 Poetry, 15, 31, 75, 78, 79, 148, 156, 179.  
 Politics, 48, 51f.  
 Portuguese influence, 182, 198.  
 Prajāpati, 18, 29.  
 Primary education, 169f., 209, 213-15, 227.  
 Princes, education of, 48, 126f.  
 Project method, 211.  
 Prostitutes, 75-6.  
 'Public schools', 211.  
 Punishments, 23, 52, 155, 173.  
 Pupils—  
   Admission to Buddhist colleges, 145  
   Age of, 27f., 47, 139, 152, 158.  
   Brāhmaṇ, 19.  
   Buddhist, 83f.  
   Clothing, 25f., 83.  
   Collecting alms, 19, 21, 84.  
   Discipline of, 16, 19f., 24, 52f., 84f., 157, 172f.  
   Food, 21, 84, 85.  
   Initiation, 18, 26f., 47, 83f., in south India, 181.  
   Length of course, 28f., 33, 89, 145, 152, 155.  
   Muslim, 107f.  
   Numbers, 16, 140, 145, 152, 156, 161, 214-15, 217, 218, 220, 228.  
*Purāna*, 15, 31, 48, 53.  
 Purohita, 2, 46, 58.  
 Pyal schools, 156f.  
*Rāmāyana*, 8, 49, 56, 59, 66, 79f., 154, 175.  
 Rāmpur, 148.  
 Razīya, 78, 109f.  
 Reading, 69, 101, 104, 118, 119, 120, 153, 160, 162, 171.  
 Religious education—  
   Brāhmaṇ, 2-14 *passim*, 183-190 *passim*, 195; by gurus, 22, 24-5; *see also* Vedic schools.  
 British controlled schools, 205.

Buddhist, 89, 103.  
in early elementary schools, 172.  
Muslim, 133.  
Sūdras, 70, 172.  
*Rigveda*, 2f., 10, 33, 40, 73.  
Royal education, 49f., 127f.

Sadler Commission, 207.  
*Sākhā*, 7, 32f.  
Salogti, 141.  
*Sāmaveda*, 5, 31, 34.  
*Samhitā*, 33, 37, 39.  
Sangha, 83f., 87, 102, 164.  
Sangharāmas, 91, 106, 143.  
Sankarāchārya, 146.  
Sāṅkya, 38, 51, 144.  
Sanskrit, 14f., 32, 35, 55, 63, 69, 75, 94, 96, 104, 115, 119, 123, 136, 176, 178.  
Sanskrit College, 199.  
Sāntarakṣita, 145.  
Sanyāsī, 25, 30.  
Sargent Report, 209-10.  
*Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa*, 8, 18, 26.  
Satyakāma, 18-19.  
Science, 108, 119, 135, 207.  
Shāh Jahān, 68, 122f., 124.  
Sher Shāh, 115, 148.  
Sialkot, 125.  
Sikandar Lodī, 111f., 148.  
Sitā, 79f.  
Slaves, education of, 109, 111.  
Soldiers, education of, 48f.  
Soma ritual, 3f.  
Specialization, 36f., universities, 149.  
Strabo, 62.  
Students, *see* Pupils.  
Sūdras, 8, 17, 155.  
Sullivan, 199.  
*Sūtras*, 12, 27, 29, 30, 32, 34, 41, 90, 94, 162.  
Śvetaketu, 11f., 18, 29, 42.  
Syriac, 180f.  
Syrian Christians, 179-82.

Tagore, Rabindranath, 210.  
Taimur, 111, 114, 182.  
*Taittiriya Brāhmaṇa*, 28.  
Takshaśilā, 63f., 138f.  
Tamil, 157, 176f.  
Tamralipti, 91.  
Tantric philosophy, 140, 144, 147.

Taxila, *see* Takshaśilā.  
Teacher—  
Brāhmaṇ, 3, 7, 18f., 40, 46f., 49, 55-6, 155, 169, 171, 191.  
Buddhist, 85f.  
Fees, 16, 26, 152, 157, 160, 169f.  
Introduction to, 18f.  
Muslim, 107f., 149.  
Primary, 152, 214-5.  
Rules for, 22, 87f., 178f.  
Service of, 21, 85f., 88.  
Worshipped, 22, 58, 191.  
Technical education, 217f.  
Telugu, 157, 176.  
Textbooks, 34, 55, 153, 168, 198, 201.  
Thomason, James, 204.  
Tiladaka, 91.  
Tirumukkudal, 142.  
Turuvorriyur, 142.  
Tod, 58f.  
*Tolkappiyam*, 177f.  
Tols, 15, 141, 152, 204.  
Trade and trading classes, 51, 54, 60f., 64f., 151, 159.  
Transmigration, 11, 82, 185, 188f.  
*Tripiṭaka*, 88, 92.  
Tughlak dynasty, 110.  
Turkish, 115.

Uddandapura, *see* Odantapuri  
Udgātri, 5f.  
Universities, 42, 108, 134, 138f., 205, 207, 208, 212, 214, 217.  
University Grants Commission, 224-25.  
*Upanishads*, 10f., 19, 20, 23, 25, 29, 32, 37, 42, 47, 123, 144, 185.  
Urdu, 112f., 116, 159, 226.

Vaiśyas, 8, 12, 16-17, 26, 27, 28, 46f., 60, 162, 184.  
Valabhi, 93, 95, 146.  
Vānaprasthas, 10, 20, 25, 30.  
*Vārttikas*, 35.  
Vasishṭha, 13, 37, 43, 48.  
*Vedānta*, 10, 22, 23, 37, 82, 139, 142.  
Vedic schools, 2f., 12f., 36, 46.  
Veterinary science, 63f.  
Vihāras, 83f., 143.  
Vikramśila, 101, 109, 146.  
Village community, 65, 169f.

- Vinaya, 83, 89, 93, 96, 97.  
Vocational training, 46f., 131, 190.
- Ward, William, 15, 58, 75, 154, 160,  
161.  
Wardha Scheme, 211f.  
Wellesley, Lord, 199.
- Western European influence, 191,  
192, 195, 197f.  
Women's education, 72f., 161, 228.  
Writing, 32, 42, 62, 104, 118, 119,  
153f., 157, 160, 162f., 171, 174.
- Yajurveda*, 6, 31, 43.  
Yoga, 38, 51, 54, 82.

# *Some Books for Teachers*

## MODERN INDIAN EDUCATION

### History and Problems

'The author is dispassionate in his views. His method of approach is marked with sobriety and balanced judgement. His treatment is incisive and illuminating.'

By T. N. SIQUEIRA

*Teachers' Journal*

Boards Rs 4·75

('Teaching in India' Series No. xxx)

Limp Rs 4·00

## BIOGRAPHICAL STUDIES

### IN MODERN INDIAN EDUCATION

'The book is a masterpiece of compression, sense of proportion and well-informed appreciation.'

By H. V. HAMPTON

*Journal of Education & Psychology*

Rs 6

## EDUCATION IN GREAT BRITAIN

'Although first published in 1949, this revised edition can be recommended as an excellent, up-to-date guide to the history and character of education in this country [England].'

*Teachers' World*

By W. O. LESTER SMITH

(Home University Library, No. 210)

Third edition 10s. 6d

## A SHORT HISTORY

### OF EDUCATIONAL IDEAS

'A reliable and attractive book that will bring new understanding to any one who is prepared to study it.'

*Journal of Education*

By S. J. CURTIS and M. E. A. BOULTWOOD

(University Tutorial Press)

Second edition 23s